

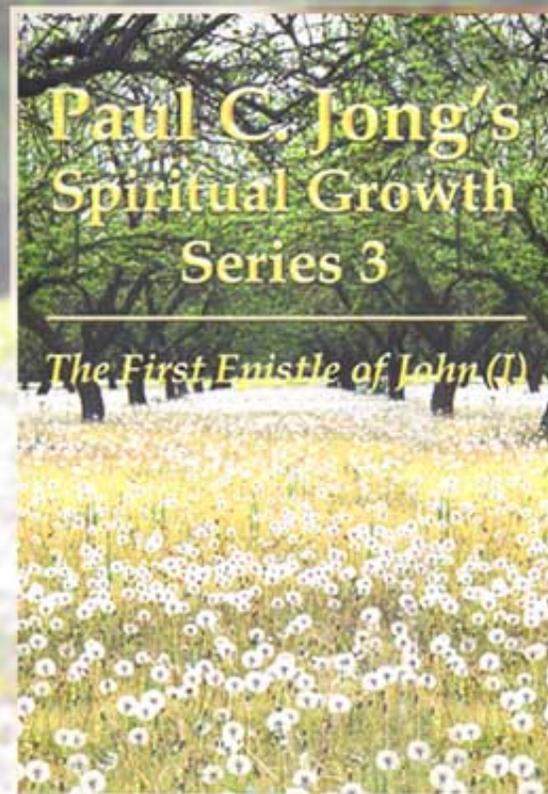


*The New Life Mission*

# Paul C. Jong's Spiritual Growth Series 3

---

*The First Epistle of John (I)*



[Begin Reading](#)

[Table of Contents](#)

[User Guide](#)

# Worldwide websites of



# The New Life Mission

The Official Website of The New Life Mission

[www.nlmission.com](http://www.nlmission.com) or  
[www.bjnewlife.org](http://www.bjnewlife.org)

Please find your vernacular websites below.

You can download Christian e-books and request Christian books for free.

Feel free to visit our websites below right now!

**A** [www.nlmafghanistan.com](http://www.nlmafghanistan.com)  
[www.nlmafrikaans.com](http://www.nlmafrikaans.com)  
[www.nlmalbania.com](http://www.nlmalbania.com)  
[www.nlmamharic.com](http://www.nlmamharic.com)  
[www.nlmangola.com](http://www.nlmangola.com)  
[www.nlmarabemirates.com](http://www.nlmarabemirates.com)  
[www.nlmarabic.com](http://www.nlmarabic.com)  
[www.nlmargentina.com](http://www.nlmargentina.com)  
[www.nlmarmenia.com](http://www.nlmarmenia.com)  
[www.nlmaruba.com](http://www.nlmaruba.com)  
[www.nlmaustralia.com](http://www.nlmaustralia.com)  
[www.nlmaustria.com](http://www.nlmaustria.com)

**B** [www.nlmbahamas.com](http://www.nlmbahamas.com)  
[www.nlmbahrain.com](http://www.nlmbahrain.com)  
[www.nlmbangladesh.com](http://www.nlmbangladesh.com)  
[www.nlmbelarus.com](http://www.nlmbelarus.com)  
[www.nlmbelgium.com](http://www.nlmbelgium.com)  
[www.nlmbengali.com](http://www.nlmbengali.com)  
[www.nlmbenin.com](http://www.nlmbenin.com)  
[www.nlmbhutan.com](http://www.nlmbhutan.com)  
[www.nlmbolivia.com](http://www.nlmbolivia.com)

[www.nlmbotswana.com](http://www.nlmbotswana.com)  
[www.nlmbrasil.com](http://www.nlmbrasil.com)  
[www.nlmbriton.com](http://www.nlmbriton.com)  
[www.nlmbrunei.com](http://www.nlmbrunei.com)  
[www.nlmbulgaria.com](http://www.nlmbulgaria.com)  
[www.nlmburkinafaso.com](http://www.nlmburkinafaso.com)  
[www.nlmburundi.com](http://www.nlmburundi.com)

**C** [www.nlmcameroon.com](http://www.nlmcameroon.com)  
[www.nlmcanada.com](http://www.nlmcanada.com)  
[www.nlmcebuano.com](http://www.nlmcebuano.com)  
[www.nlmchichewa.com](http://www.nlmchichewa.com)  
[www.nlmchile.com](http://www.nlmchile.com)  
[www.nlmchin.com](http://www.nlmchin.com)  
[www.nlmchina.com](http://www.nlmchina.com)  
[www.nlmcolombia.com](http://www.nlmcolombia.com)  
[www.nlmcongo.com](http://www.nlmcongo.com)  
[www.nlmcostarica.com](http://www.nlmcostarica.com)  
[www.nlmcotedivoire.com](http://www.nlmcotedivoire.com)  
[www.nlmcroatia.com](http://www.nlmcroatia.com)  
[www.nlmczech.com](http://www.nlmczech.com)  
**D** [www.nlmdenmark.com](http://www.nlmdenmark.com)

[www.nlmdioula.com](http://www.nlmdioula.com)  
[www.nlmdominica.com](http://www.nlmdominica.com)  
[www.nlmdutch.com](http://www.nlmdutch.com)  
**E** [www.nlmecuador.com](http://www.nlmecuador.com)  
[www.nlmegypt.com](http://www.nlmegypt.com)  
[www.nlmelsalvador.com](http://www.nlmelsalvador.com)  
[www.nlmequatorialguinea.com](http://www.nlmequatorialguinea.com)  
[www.nlmethiopia.com](http://www.nlmethiopia.com)  
**F** [www.nlmfinland.com](http://www.nlmfinland.com)  
[www.nlmfrance.com](http://www.nlmfrance.com)  
[www.nlmfrench.com](http://www.nlmfrench.com)  
**G** [www.nlmgabon.com](http://www.nlmgabon.com)  
[www.nlmgeorgian.com](http://www.nlmgeorgian.com)  
[www.nlmgerman.com](http://www.nlmgerman.com)  
[www.nlmgermany.com](http://www.nlmgermany.com)  
[www.nlmghana.com](http://www.nlmghana.com)  
[www.nlmgreek.com](http://www.nlmgreek.com)  
[www.nlmgrenada.com](http://www.nlmgrenada.com)  
[www.nlmguatemala.com](http://www.nlmguatemala.com)



CONTENTS



# Worldwide websites of The New Life Mission

**H** [www.nlmgujarati.com](http://www.nlmgujarati.com)  
[www.nlmhaiti.com](http://www.nlmhaiti.com)  
[www.nlmhindi.com](http://www.nlmhindi.com)  
[www.nlmholland.com](http://www.nlmholland.com)  
[www.nlmhonduras.com](http://www.nlmhonduras.com)  
[www.nlmhungary.com](http://www.nlmhungary.com)  
**I** [www.nlm-india.com](http://www.nlm-india.com)  
[www.nlmindonesia.com](http://www.nlmindonesia.com)  
[www.nlmiran.com](http://www.nlmiran.com)  
[www.nlmiraq.com](http://www.nlmiraq.com)  
[www.nlmisrael.com](http://www.nlmisrael.com)  
[www.nlmitaly.com](http://www.nlmitaly.com)  
**J** [www.nlmjamaica.com](http://www.nlmjamaica.com)  
[www.nlmjapan.com](http://www.nlmjapan.com)  
[www.nlmjapanese.com](http://www.nlmjapanese.com)  
**K** [www.nlmkannada.com](http://www.nlmkannada.com)  
[www.nlmkazakhstan.com](http://www.nlmkazakhstan.com)  
[www.nlmkenya.com](http://www.nlmkenya.com)  
[www.nlmkhmer.com](http://www.nlmkhmer.com)  
[www.nlmkirghiz.com](http://www.nlmkirghiz.com)  
[www.nlmkirundi.com](http://www.nlmkirundi.com)  
[www.nlmkorea.com](http://www.nlmkorea.com)  
**L** [www.nlmlatvia.com](http://www.nlmlatvia.com)  
[www.nlmluganda.com](http://www.nlmluganda.com)  
[www.nlmluo.com](http://www.nlmluo.com)  
**M** [www.nlmmadi.com](http://www.nlmmadi.com)  
[www.nlmmalagasy.com](http://www.nlmmalagasy.com)  
[www.nlmmalayalam.com](http://www.nlmmalayalam.com)  
[www.nlmmalaysia.com](http://www.nlmmalaysia.com)  
[www.nlmmarathi.com](http://www.nlmmarathi.com)

[www.nlmmauritius.com](http://www.nlmmauritius.com)  
[www.nlmmexico.com](http://www.nlmmexico.com)  
[www.nlmmindat.com](http://www.nlmmindat.com)  
[www.nlmmizo.com](http://www.nlmmizo.com)  
[www.nlmmoldova.com](http://www.nlmmoldova.com)  
[www.nlmmongolia.com](http://www.nlmmongolia.com)  
[www.nlmmyanmar.com](http://www.nlmmyanmar.com)  
**N** [www.nlmnepal.com](http://www.nlmnepal.com)  
[www.nlmnewzealand.com](http://www.nlmnewzealand.com)  
[www.nlmnigeria.com](http://www.nlmnigeria.com)  
[www.nlmnorthkorea.com](http://www.nlmnorthkorea.com)  
[www.nlmnorway.com](http://www.nlmnorway.com)  
**P** [www.nlmpakistan.com](http://www.nlmpakistan.com)  
[www.nlmpanama.com](http://www.nlmpanama.com)  
[www.nlmperu.com](http://www.nlmperu.com)  
[www.nlmphilippines.com](http://www.nlmphilippines.com)  
[www.nlmpoland.com](http://www.nlmpoland.com)  
[www.nlmportugal.com](http://www.nlmportugal.com)  
[www.nlmportuguese.com](http://www.nlmportuguese.com)  
[www.nlmprcongo.com](http://www.nlmprcongo.com)  
**Q** [www.nlmqatar.com](http://www.nlmqatar.com)  
**R** [www.nlmromania.com](http://www.nlmromania.com)  
[www.nlmrussia.com](http://www.nlmrussia.com)  
**S** [www.nlmSaudiArabia.com](http://www.nlmSaudiArabia.com)  
[www.nlmserbian.com](http://www.nlmserbian.com)  
[www.nlmshona.com](http://www.nlmshona.com)  
[www.nlmSingapore.com](http://www.nlmSingapore.com)  
[www.nlmSlovakia.com](http://www.nlmSlovakia.com)  
[www.nlmSlovene.com](http://www.nlmSlovene.com)  
[www.nlmSolomon.com](http://www.nlmSolomon.com)

[www.nlmSouthAfrica.com](http://www.nlmSouthAfrica.com)  
[www.nlmSpain.com](http://www.nlmSpain.com)  
[www.nlmSpanish.com](http://www.nlmSpanish.com)  
[www.nlmSriLanka.com](http://www.nlmSriLanka.com)  
[www.nlmSuriname.com](http://www.nlmSuriname.com)  
[www.nlmSwahili.com](http://www.nlmSwahili.com)  
[www.nlmSwaziland.com](http://www.nlmSwaziland.com)  
[www.nlmSweden.com](http://www.nlmSweden.com)  
[www.nlmSwiss.com](http://www.nlmSwiss.com)  
**T** [www.nlmTagalog.com](http://www.nlmTagalog.com)  
[www.nlmTaiwan.com](http://www.nlmTaiwan.com)  
[www.nlmTamil.com](http://www.nlmTamil.com)  
[www.nlmTanzania.com](http://www.nlmTanzania.com)  
[www.nlmTelugu.com](http://www.nlmTelugu.com)  
[www.nlmThailand.com](http://www.nlmThailand.com)  
[www.nlmTogo.com](http://www.nlmTogo.com)  
[www.nlmTonga.com](http://www.nlmTonga.com)  
[www.nlmTurkey.com](http://www.nlmTurkey.com)  
**U** [www.nlmUganda.com](http://www.nlmUganda.com)  
[www.nlmUkraine.com](http://www.nlmUkraine.com)  
[www.nlmUrdu.com](http://www.nlmUrdu.com)  
[www.nlmUSA.com](http://www.nlmUSA.com)  
**V** [www.nlmVenezuela.com](http://www.nlmVenezuela.com)  
[www.nlmVietnam.com](http://www.nlmVietnam.com)  
**Z** [www.nlmZambia.com](http://www.nlmZambia.com)  
[www.nlmZimbabwe.com](http://www.nlmZimbabwe.com)  
[www.nlmZou.com](http://www.nlmZou.com)



## *Who is the one that denies Jesus, the almighty God?*

It is he who does not believe that Jesus is God who created the entire universe (Genesis 1:1-3, John 1:10-12).

*“Whoever denies the Son does not have the Father either; he who acknowledges the Son has the Father also” (1 John 2:23).*

He who believes that Jesus, who is God and the Savior, came by the gospel of the water and the Spirit to deliver all sinners from their sins, is saved from all his sins, and becomes a child of God the Father.

The First Epistle of John states that Jesus, who is God, came to us by the gospel of the water and the Spirit, and that He is the Son of God the Father. The Book, in other words, mostly emphasizes that Jesus is God (1 John 5:20), and concretely testifies the gospel of the water and the Spirit in chapter 5.

We must not hesitate to believe that Jesus Christ is God and to follow Him.



Paul C. Jong's  
Spiritual Growth  
Series 3

---

*The First Epistle of John (I)*

Paul C. Jong's  
Spiritual Growth  
Series 3

---

*The First Epistle of John (I)*

PAUL C. JONG

Hephzibah Publishing House  
A Ministry of THE NEW LIFE MISSION  
SEOUL, KOREA



Contents



***Paul C. Jong's Spiritual Growth Series 3:  
The First Epistle of John (I)***

---

Copyright © 2003 by The New Life Mission  
All rights reserved.

No part of this book may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any information storage and retrieval system, without the written permission of the copyright owner.

Scripture quotations are from *the New King James Version*.

ISBN 89-8314-452-1



---

---

# Table of Contents

---

---

Preface ----- 8

## CHAPTER 1

Jesus Christ Is God  
(1 John 1:1-10) ----- 13

Do You Really Have Fellowship with God?  
(1 John 1:1-10) ----- 28

Two Sorts of Confession  
(1 John 1:8-10) ----- 50

Confession in Truth  
(1 John 1:8-10) ----- 83

## CHAPTER 2

Jesus Christ Is the True God  
(1 John 2:1-5) ----- 143

Our Lord Who Has Become Our Advocate  
(1 John 2:1-17) ----- 170

Are You Living in God's Commandment?  
(1 John 2:7-11) ----- 203

Do Not Love the World or the  
Things in the World  
(1 John 2:15-17) ----- 223

Who Are the Enemies of Christ?  
(1 John 2:18-29) ----- 244



## Preface



The Apostle John is one of the greatest spiritual leaders in Christianity. All three Epistles he wrote are still testifying the most general and spiritual Truth to the saints in God’s Church. But there are some passages that are hard for us to interpret and understand.

We can give 1 John 1:8 as the first example of the difficult passages in John’s Epistles: *“If we say that we have no sin, we deceive ourselves, and the truth is not in us.”* This passage is hard to understand, especially when we apply it to the believers in the gospel of the water and the Spirit.

The second example is 1 John 1:9, *“If we confess our sins, He is faithful and just to forgive us our sins and to cleanse us from all*



*unrighteousness.*” This has been one of the most frequently quoted passages when sinners try to present the biblical ground of their prayers of repentance. Then, does this passage mean that sinners should confess their sins to be forgiven for the sins they have committed? Or, does it mean that the righteous who believe in the gospel of the water and the Spirit ought to confess their sins? We should believe this passage according to the interpretation of the Holy Spirit, the Author of the Bible, and to the intention of John the Apostle.

The third example of a difficult passage is 1 John 2:22, *“Who is a liar but he who denies that Jesus is the Christ? He is antichrist who denies the Father and the Son.”* This passage is talking about who the enemies of God are. This verse clarifies that the enemies of God are those who don’t believe that Jesus is God. And this also means that they don’t approve the Father of Jesus

Christ as God.

The fourth one is 1 John 3:6 that says, *“Whoever abides in Him does not sin. Whoever sins has neither seen Him nor known Him.”* Here, when we see the phrase *“Whoever abides in Him,”* this passage is given to the righteous who have been cleansed of all their sins by believing in the gospel of the water and the Spirit. The righteous cannot deny their faiths in any circumstances because they believe in the true gospel. Can there be some who really don’t commit sins with their flesh? Everyone sins. But, the believers in the gospel of the water and the Spirit cannot commit such a sin as denying the true gospel.

Who are those who believe in Jesus the true God as their perfect Savior today? They are the ones who are delivered from all their sins by believing in the gospel of the water and the Spirit in their hearts. They are the sinless saints because



they believe in this true gospel. Today, many people have become God’s enemies, who don’t believe in Jesus the God as God. Owing to this unbelief, this world is now full of people who don’t believe that the Father of Jesus is God. They are the sinners who don’t believe that Jesus the true God has saved us from all our sins once and for all.

The last difficult passage is 1 John 5:5-8 that says, *“Who is he who overcomes the world, but he who believes that Jesus is the Son of God? This is He who came by water and blood—Jesus Christ; not only by water, but by water and blood. And it is the Spirit who bears witness, because the Spirit is truth. For there are three that bear witness in heaven: the Father, the Word, and the Holy Spirit; and these three are one. And there are three that bear witness on earth: the Spirit, the water, and the blood; and these three agree as one.”*

What does “the water” mean here? It refers to the baptism that Jesus received to take all the sins of mankind at once (Matthew 3:15). This means, in other words, the baptism Jesus received from John the Baptist at the Jordan River. This Truth tells us that Jesus’ baptism was the only way to save us, all mankind, by blotting out all our sins (1 Peter 3:21).

Now I would like to explain, through the allegory of the Galileo case, the result of the erroneous faiths of those who believe only in the blood of the Cross, which is far different from the faith in the gospel of the water and the Spirit that originated from the Apostolic Age.



## What Does the Galileo Case Teach Us?

You may know well about Galileo Galilei (1564-1642), who was known to have said the famous remark, “But the earth is moving nonetheless.” He was an Italian physicist, astronomer, mathematician, philosopher, and inventor.

People in his days believed the geocentric theory, which said that the earth was located at the center of the universe and that all the planets revolved around the earth. But, by devoting himself to the astronomical observation, Galileo came to advocate the Copernican heliocentric theory that publicly opposed geocentricism. This provoked the indignation of the Papal court, and as a result, he came to suffer many hardships and persecutions. But because of this, he won the recognition as one of the greatest scientists who

had contributed to the development of modern science.

Most people of his days believed in geocentricism, and it was recognized as an absolute truth being supported by the blind faithfulness to their religion. On the other hand, many geographical and astronomical discoveries revealed the fallacies of geocentricism one after another, but people of those days could not say anything about it because the opponents of this theory were regarded as the enemies of God, and therefore, could not avoid suffering persecution. But Galileo announced his new theory boldly. Of course, he was persecuted severely by the mainstream religion of that age, though the truth could never be distorted or ignored by force or by the number of its opponents.

As a matter of fact, the absolute majority of today’s Christians believe only in the blood on the Cross. They don’t know the Truth that Jesus,



the true God, took all the sins of the world once and for all by being baptized by John the Baptist. They vainly believe in Jesus as their Savior because they have no idea what the gospel of the water and the Spirit is. This is like the blind trust in the geocentric theory. And, if we announce the decisive fallacy of today's Christianity that believes only in the blood of the Cross, there will be a great disturbance, like that of the Galileo case.

There is a saying that says, "We never think twice on the matters that were made solid as the common senses." As such, Many Christians do not even think about the possible fallacies of their faiths for they have believed concretely that the blood of the Cross is the only truth of their salvation. That's why today's Christianity is full of such blind believers.

The Word of 1 John teaches us that we have to know what the gospel of the water and the Spirit

is, and who the false prophets are. Therefore, we should first properly learn the gospel of the water and the Spirit to reach and have a deep understanding of the Word in 1 John.

I pray to God that He will give all of us the wisdom of discrimination, the Truth of salvation, and the faith that concretely believes the Truth.

I give all my thanks to God. Hallelujah! ☒



# **CHAPTER 1**

---

## **SERMON 1**

**(1 John 1:1-10)**

**“Jesus Christ Is God”**



Contents



## Jesus Christ Is God

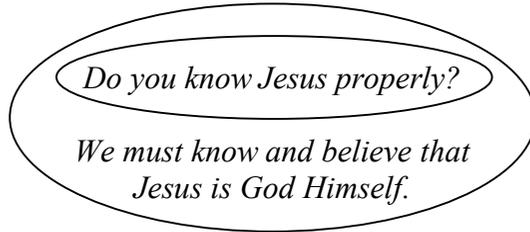
< 1 John 1:1-10 >

**“That which was from the beginning, which we have heard, which we have seen with our eyes, which we have looked upon, and our hands have handled, concerning the Word of life—the life was manifested, and we have seen, and bear witness, and declare to you that eternal life which was with the Father and was manifested to us—that which we have seen and heard we declare to you, that you also may have fellowship with us; and truly our fellowship is with the Father and with His Son Jesus Christ. And these things we write to you that your joy may be full. This is the message which we have heard from Him and declare to you, that God is light and in Him is no**

**darkness at all. If we say that we have fellowship with Him, and walk in darkness, we lie and do not practice the truth. But if we walk in the light as He is in the light, we have fellowship with one another, and the blood of Jesus Christ His Son cleanses us from all sin. If we say that we have no sin, we deceive ourselves, and the truth is not in us. If we confess our sins, He is faithful and just to forgive us our sins and to cleanse us from all unrighteousness. If we say that we have not sinned, we make Him a liar, and His word is not in us.”**



## Why Did the Apostle John Speak of Jesus Christ Who Was from the Beginning?



For us to understand 1 John, we must all first know Jesus properly, who is God Himself. All of us must stand firmly on the rock of this faith that truly knows and believes in Jesus Christ as God. To know and believe in Jesus the God as our Savior necessarily means that we would know that He is the God who created us. For all of us, Jesus Christ is fundamentally the Creator God and our perfect Savior. So for God the Father,

Jesus is His only begotten Son, while for us, He has become our true Savior. It is when we all know Jesus Christ as God that we can encounter the true light of salvation and believe in it as well.

On the other hand, if you do not know Jesus Christ as God, then only spiritual confusion will be brought to you. We must, therefore, stand firm on the Truth that Jesus Christ is truthfully God Himself, the One who has given us eternal life.

In 1 John 5:20, the Apostle John testifies that Jesus Christ is the true God, saying, “*And we know that the Son of God has come and has given us an understanding, that we may know Him who is true; and we are in Him who is true, in His Son Jesus Christ. This is the true God and eternal life.*” For all of us, in other words, it is Jesus Christ who is God, and it is He who has given us eternal life. As such, by placing our faith in Jesus the God and believing in this



Savior, we must be washed from our sins and become God's children. We must be saved from all our sins by knowing and believing in Jesus properly as the God who has given us salvation through the gospel of the water and the Spirit.

## **Today's Scripture Passage from 1 John 1 Is Telling Us from Where True Fellowship Comes**

*From where does true fellowship with God come?*

*This true fellowship is attainable only when we know that Jesus Christ is God for us and believe in the gospel of the water and the Spirit.*

1 John 1:3 tells us that for us to have true fellowship with Jesus Christ, God Himself, we must first begin by knowing and believing in Him as our Savior.

According to the Apostles' understanding of the divine Jesus, in other words, He had no imperfection whatsoever. And the Apostle John also says in 1 John 1:6-7, *"If we say that we have fellowship with Him, and walk in darkness, we lie and do not practice the truth. But if we walk in the light as He is in the light, we have fellowship with one another, and the blood of Jesus Christ His Son cleanses us from all sin."*

This passage tells us that if we truthfully believe in Jesus as our Savior, then we can have true fellowship with Him by believing in the gospel of the water and the Spirit that He has given us. The Apostle John is testifying here that to have this true fellowship with God is to be washed from our sins by believing that Jesus is



God Himself and the Son of God the Father, and by also believing that Jesus Christ took upon the sins of the world through the baptism He received from John the Baptist in the Jordan River and shed His precious blood on the Cross. This is because the gospel truth of the water and the Spirit, that Jesus Christ, God Himself, has saved us from all our sins, lasts forever.

The passage, where it says, "*The blood of Jesus Christ His Son cleanses us from all sin,*" tells us the following: Because Jesus had been baptized by John the Baptist, He could take upon the sins of the world; and thus, that Jesus was crucified and shed His precious blood on the Cross became His meritorious deed that has washed away people's sins in consequence. Our Divine Lord was baptized by John the Baptist to take upon all our sins, and He was crucified and shed His blood on the Cross to bear all the condemnation of sin. Therefore, today's

Scripture passage tells us that this blood that Jesus Christ shed on the Cross becomes our salvation that has atoned all sinners' sins and iniquities.

It is indeed through Jesus Christ that we have been washed from all our sins by faith. We must believe that Jesus Christ, God Himself, came to this earth as the Savior incarnated in the flesh of man; that to blot out our sins, He took upon the sins of the world by being baptized by John the Baptist, was crucified and shed His blood on the Cross, and rose from the dead; and that by doing all these things He has given us new life (Matthew 3:13-17, John 19:30). Since Jesus Christ fulfilled the perfect salvation as such, to know this Lord Jesus Christ as our God and Savior, we must first know His baptism and bloodshed, and by placing our faith in them, receive the remission of our sins that cleanses us from all our sins once for all.



1 John 1:9 testifies, *“If we confess our sins, He is faithful and just to forgive us our sins and to cleanse us from all unrighteousness.”* This passage tells us that if we confess that we are piles of sin who are born with sin from the day of our birth (Mark 7:21-22), and if we confess our insufficient selves who cannot help but sin all the time, we can receive the remission of our sins by believing in the true gospel— that our Lord God has already cleansed away all our sins with the baptism that He received from John the Baptist, and that He bore all the condemnation of sin by shedding His blood on the Cross. In other words, even though we are such that we cannot but go to hell, when we admit that we are such sinful beings and when we believe in the Truth that Jesus Christ has already washed away all our sins with His baptism and the bloodshed on the Cross, seeing this faith of ours, God will then cleanse us from our sins. This was made possible because

our Divine Lord is the true God who was more than able to already cleanse away all our sins with His baptism and bloodshed.

Therefore, we must first confess to our Lord God saying, “We are evildoers who indeed sin all the time.” And we must know and believe in the Truth that this Lord has already blotted out all our sins once for all with the baptism that He received from John and the precious blood that He shed on the Cross. This perfect washing of sin was made possible because Jesus Christ is the true Savior and the true God for all of us. Our Divine Lord is the God who has enabled all of us to recognize and know the true washing of sin through the gospel truth of the water and the Spirit. It is Jesus Christ our God who has made it possible for us to know and believe in the true remission of our sins through the gospel of the water and the Spirit. Now, all we have to do is just know and believe that our Lord has washed



away all our sins once for all with His baptism and His bloodshed on the Cross. This Divine Lord is the true God and the true Savior for us.

The Apostle John said in 1 John 1:10, *“If we say that we have not sinned, we make Him a liar, and His word is not in us.”* We are such that we cannot but sin all the time. We need to realize that if we say to Jesus Christ our God that we do not sin in our flesh, we would actually be committing the sin of despising and standing against the work of salvation that God has done for us. However, these sins that we commit all the time as we carry on with our lives are also included in the sins of the world, and therefore this means that our Lord God has washed away all our sins with the gospel of the water and the Spirit that He has given us. We must also realize that our Lord said this so that those who neither know nor believe in the gospel truth of the water and the Spirit would not be able to receive the

gift of the true washing of sin unless they believe in this Truth.

If you now truthfully know and believe that Jesus the God is the son of God, then you will be able to believe that the Lord has delivered all of us from our sins by coming to this earth, being baptized by John the Baptist, and shedding His blood. In fact, it is only when we first begin by knowing Jesus Christ our God that it is made easier for all of us to believe in the gospel of the water and the Spirit that the Lord has given us. It is not such a difficult thing for everyone to believe in this true gospel, because the Bible clearly says that Jesus Christ, the true God, has fulfilled this Truth. If it is something that the true God Jesus has done, then it must be true and perfect. It cannot be a lie or a mistake, that He should repent of it, for it is written in Numbers 23:19,

*“God is not a man, that He should lie,*



*Nor a son of man, that He should repent.*

*Has He said, and will He not do?*

*Or has He spoken, and will He not make it good?"*

Jesus, our true God, has saved us all mankind from all our sins through His baptism and His bloodshed on the Cross. He also was resurrected from the dead, ascended to Heaven to reveal His original status as the true God, and became the true Savior for the believers in the gospel of the water and the Spirit. Truly, it is by our faith in Jesus Christ, the God who came of the gospel of the water and the Spirit, that we can have unfaltering faith in this true gospel.

## **We Must Know That Jesus, the True God, Has Saved Us with the Gospel of the Water and the Spirit**

Had today's Christians begun their journey of faith from the proper knowledge of and beliefs in Jesus the true God, they would have been able to accept it only as natural that He took upon the sins of mankind by being baptized by John the Baptist (Matthew 3:15). However, because many people do not believe that Jesus is the true God, as a result, they have not yet receive the grace of salvation that was fulfilled by His baptism and bloodshed.

Therefore, for you and I to have true fellowship with God, we must begin from the faith that believes in Jesus as the true God. Let me repeat this once more. If all of us do not begin our faith from this faith that knows and



believes in Jesus the God, our faith will all be rendered completely futile. If you have this faith in the divinity of Jesus, you will then find it easier to believe in the gospel of the water and the Spirit. And it is by our faith in this true gospel that we can be perfected. By believing in Jesus Christ, the God who has saved us from all our sins, we can all be washed from our sins once for all by faith.

If we do not even realize that Jesus is God, what is the use of believing in Him as our Savior? And if you do not believe in the gospel of the water and the Spirit given by this Divine Jesus, there can be no benefit for you at all. But if you have this faith in Jesus as the Savior and God, then by believing in the gospel of the water and the Spirit given by the Lord, you will be able to receive the washing of sin and eternal life into your heart.

Jesus Christ, God Himself, came to this earth

to save you and me from our sins, and by being baptized by John the Baptist, being crucified and dying on the Cross, and rising from the dead again, He has indeed saved us perfectly. It is my sincerest hope and prayer that you would all believe in this Jesus Christ who has enabled you to be saved from all your sins as the Son of God and the true God Himself.

The problem, however, is that many of today's Christians do not know Jesus properly. The false teachers of Christianity had confused the spiritual Truth from the Early Church age (Acts 15:24), for they did not know the gospel of the water and the Spirit at all. To untangle from their sins those whose faith is all confused like a tangled spool and who believe in Jesus Christ our God only vaguely, we have to believe in Jesus the true God as our Savior even more fervently. As such, we have the duty to bear witness of the gospel truth of the water and the Spirit to all



people. You and I must now know and believe that Jesus Christ our God is the Creator who made the universe and all things in it, and that He is the true Savior.

## **Jesus the True God Is the Creator Who Made the Heavens and the Earth, and the Lord of the Universe**

In Genesis 1:1-3, it is written, *“In the beginning God created the heavens and the earth. The earth was without form, and void; and darkness was on the face of the deep. And the Spirit of God was hovering over the face of the waters. Then God said, ‘Let there be light’; and there was light.”* This God here who said, “Let there be light,” is none other than Jesus Christ.

Let us turn to John 1:1-3: *“In the beginning*

*was the Word, and the Word was with God, and the Word was God. He was in the beginning with God. All things were made through Him, and without Him nothing was made that was made.”*

This passage tells us that in the beginning, God created the universe with the Word. So God created all things, and if anyone asks who He is, the answer is that He is Jesus Christ, God Himself.

John 1:10 also says, *“He was in the world, and the world was made through Him, and the world did not know Him.”* The pronoun “He” used here refers to Jesus Christ, the one and only God. Jesus the true God came to this earth incarnated in the flesh of man to save sinners.

Jesus Christ is the One who created the universe and all things in it. In other words, He is God Himself. Jesus Christ is the God who has delivered us from all our sins and death by coming to this earth incarnated in the flesh of



man, being baptized by John the Baptist, shouldering the sins of the world and being crucified, and rising from the dead again. This divine Jesus is the Son of God, and He has become the Messiah, our Savior. It is by Jesus Christ the true God that this world was created.

Therefore, as we believe in Jesus Christ the true God, though we have never seen God with our eyes of the flesh, we can still meet Him through Jesus Christ (John 1:18). God the Father had sent His only begotten Son to this earth incarnated in the flesh of man, and through Jesus this Son of God, He has enabled us to find out who our Savior is. It is from this knowledge—“Jesus is God”—that our race of faith must begin. It is only then that the race can be begun from the faith that knows the Truth of salvation. We must all know the Truth that Jesus Christ, God Himself, came to this earth and has saved us from all the sins of the world with the gospel

truth of the water and the Spirit.

We must have the knowledge and faith that the Divine Jesus is God Himself. He who is God, He who is the Creator who made the universe, came to this earth as our Savior and has saved us from the sins of the world. God Himself, in other words, came to this earth in the flesh of man, shouldered the sins of the world by being baptized, was crucified and shed His blood to death, rose from the dead again, and has thereby saved us from the sins of the world once for all.

You need to realize here just how much Jesus Christ had sacrificed Himself to save you from the sins of the world. Even though Jesus was God Himself, He had to become a creature to deliver us from our sins and make us God’s people, He had to take upon everyone’s sins by being baptized by John the Baptist, and He had to sacrifice Himself by shedding the blood of His own flesh on the Cross. And by rising from the



dead, He has bestowed His mercy on all those who believe in this Truth that has made them God’s own people. It is because we believe in Jesus the true God that we, who believe in His baptism and His sacrifice on the Cross, have received the true power of salvation. This is how all human beings who believe in Jesus the true God can now be saved perfectly through the gospel truth of the water and the Spirit.

Our Lord is, in other words, the God who came to deliver us from the sins of the world. In contrast, however, all the world’s great men and the founders of the religions that have come and gone in this world are no more than mere creatures. But the divine Jesus is fundamentally God Himself. Jesus who is our God is our Creator, and we are His creation. All human beings are the creatures made by Jesus Christ. It is because Jesus the true God created the heavens and the earth that everything exists. It is because

this divine Jesus said, “Let there be light,” that this light still exists in this world. This is why Paul said that the knowledge of Jesus Christ is the most excellent one (Philippians 3:8).

## **Beginning from the Belief that Jesus is God, We Must Seek to Understand the Word of the Bible**

When we know and believe in Jesus Christ, God Himself, there is nothing difficult about the Truth of the gospel of the water and the Spirit. The Apostle John tells us that Jesus Christ the true God has saved His believers from the sins of the world. If we believe in Him as the Omniscient God, we cannot but confess before Him that we are weak and insufficient beings—in other words, that we are the seeds of sin—and



come to accept the gospel of the water and the Spirit. However, if we think of ourselves as believers in Jesus even as we neither acknowledge that He is God nor believe in the gospel truth of the water and the Spirit, we will ultimately end up deceiving both ourselves and God, and we will forever be unable to receive the grace of salvation.

Jesus Christ the Almighty God has saved us from all the sins of the world with the gospel of the water and the Spirit. We must know and believe that to save us from the sins of the world, Jesus Christ, the true God, came to us through the gospel of the water and the Spirit. He has given us the gospel of the water and the Spirit, and He has enabled all those who believe in this truth of salvation to have true fellowship with God.

Therefore, every Christian must recognize this true God Jesus as the Savior and believe as such.

Those who do not believe in Jesus as God are unable to understand the gospel Word of the water and the Spirit written in the Scriptures. Even though it is clearly written in the Bible that the Jesus Christ, God Himself, has blotted out all our sins with the gospel of the water and the Spirit, they still do not acknowledge this work of God. It is because they do not recognize Jesus Christ as their God and Savior that they neither recognize all the Word of truth written in the Bible. Do you now believe in Jesus Christ as God Himself, and as your Savior?

If Jesus is our God, then He is also God for the entire mankind. It must then be also true that Jesus has saved us by coming to this earth, being baptized, dying on the Cross, and rising from the dead again. Even though Satan has muddled and twisted people's understanding of God, the gospel Truth is, in fact, simple enough to believe.

We need to tell others that they must have



faith in Jesus as God. Yet when we actually speak to countless Christians, we discover that while they believe that Jesus is the Son of God, not many of them know or believe that He is God Himself. This is what the Apostle John is speaking of. Those who do not believe that Jesus is fundamentally God Himself all have flawed faith.

The reason why I am saying this repeatedly is because people throughout the world do not know the gospel Truth of the water and the Spirit, which is the truth of salvation that Jesus, God Himself, has given us. Our duty on this earth is to know Jesus as the true God and to preach His salvation, that God has remitted away all the sins of this world with the true gospel of the water and the Spirit. What could be more worthwhile than this?

My dear fellow believers, please pray for me and for our co-workers also. When those of us

who believe in the gospel of the water and the Spirit pray, the Divine Jesus Christ and God His Father hear us, for Jesus Christ has saved us and become our Savior God, and He is the only begotten Son of God the Father. Jesus Christ our God hears our prayers and answers us. I ask you to pray now that God would save all the people of this entire world. And I hope that you would all pray to God by placing your faith in the Almighty God Jesus.

Let me once again reiterate my admonition for you here. Believe that Jesus Christ is the true Savior and God. From henceforth, Jesus Christ, God Himself, will now protect you from all danger in your behalf. However, if you do not believe in Jesus as the true God, then He cannot lead your faith to the right path.

Satan is trying to corrupt your faith. And this age is turning increasingly worse. You should therefore believe even more firmly that Jesus is



God, and that He has come to this earth through the gospel of the water and the Spirit. What you must know is the Truth that Jesus Christ is God, that He came to this earth incarnated in the flesh of man to deliver us from the sins of the world, and that He has saved us through His baptism and the blood of the Cross—in this must you believe. I hope and pray that you would all know and believe in Jesus Christ in the Truth of the water and the Spirit.

We must also realize that if we lose this faith in the true God Jesus as our Savior, we are nothing to God. Satan will persistently try to corrupt our faith in Jesus our God and in the gospel of the water and the Spirit. But this is the very reason why we must hold onto the gospel Truth of the water and the Spirit that we believe even more steadfastly.

The strong tide of atheism is flowing all over the world. After Friedrich W. Nietzsche dared to

say, “God is dead,” the people of this world are publicly challenging God, saying, “Where is the living God?” Uniting together, they try to stand against God and to ostracize those who believe in Him.

However, we the faithful believers have to swim against this current by standing firm with our faith in Jesus the true God. It would be only a tragedy if we fail to keep this faith. Only when we believe that the divine Jesus is our God do we truly believe in Him; otherwise, we do not believe in anything.

As more time goes by, this world will now get only worse. But by believing in Jesus as our God, we are still preaching the gospel of the water and the Spirit throughout this world. I am sure that Jesus the true God will protect us from all evil spirits as long as we have faith in His divinity and the gospel of the water and the Spirit.

I give all my thanks to God. ☒



# **CHAPTER 1**

---

## **SERMON 2**

**(1 John 1:1-10)**

**“Do You Really Have  
Fellowship With God?”**



Contents



## Do You Really Have Fellowship with God?

< 1 John 1:1-10 >

“That which was from the beginning, which we have heard, which we have seen with our eyes, which we have looked upon, and our hands have handled, concerning the Word of life—the life was manifested, and we have seen, and bear witness, and declare to you that eternal life which was with the Father and was manifested to us—that which we have seen and heard we declare to you, that you also may have fellowship with us; and truly our fellowship is with the Father and with His Son Jesus Christ. And these things we write to you that your joy may be full. This is the message which we have heard from Him and declare to you, that God is light and in Him is no

darkness at all. If we say that we have fellowship with Him, and walk in darkness, we lie and do not practice the truth. But if we walk in the light as He is in the light, we have fellowship with one another, and the blood of Jesus Christ His Son cleanses us from all sin. If we say that we have no sin, we deceive ourselves, and the truth is not in us. If we confess our sins, He is faithful and just to forgive us our sins and to cleanse us from all unrighteousness. If we say that we have not sinned, we make Him a liar, and His word is not in us.”

*How can there be true fellowship with God?*

*It is possible only by believing in the gospel of the water and the Spirit.*



The Bible says that if we claim to have fellowship with God, and yet walk in darkness, then we are liars, and that if we walk in the light of Truth, as the Lord is in the light, then we have fellowship with God. We can therefore realize that we, the saints and God's servants, also can have true fellowship with each other through faith only when we are in the light of Truth.

We believe in God's light of Truth, and also preach the gospel of the water and the Spirit, the gospel of salvation, to others, so that they may be delivered from their spiritual death by faith. If we live by faith in God's light of Truth, then we are also the children of light who practice the Truth. Therefore, for us to have true fellowship with each other, we have to first accept into our hearts the gospel Truth of the water and the Spirit in faith. If, on the other hand, we fail to discover the light of Truth revealed to us brightly as the gospel of the water and the Spirit, and are

therefore unable to abide in faith, then we will ultimately end up abiding in darkness.

This is why you must confess your sins before God's Truth and believe in the gospel's true light, if you still do not have faith in the gospel of the water and the Spirit and are walking in darkness. It is from not believing in the true light of salvation that we end up as liars before God. Therefore, we must all believe with our hearts in the Truth of gospel, that Jesus Christ has delivered us from all our sins, for He loved us so much that He came to this earth, was baptized, and even died on the Cross. Doing so, we must then live the rest of our lives spreading the light of Truth.

The Apostle John says that we can have true fellowship only when we are in God's light of Truth. When people read 1 John, they come across many passages that cannot be understood in carnal thoughts. So everyone unanimously



agrees that there are many difficult passages. But if one has a proper understanding of the baptism that Jesus received and His bloodshed on the Cross, and if he believes in them, it is not so difficult to interpret and understand 1 John. In the Word of God, there is no truth that cannot be solved with the gospel Word of the water and the Spirit. But it is filled with the Word of truth that just cannot be interpreted without the true gospel. In other words, only those who have been washed from their sins can interpret 1 John and taste the essence of its truth. This is because through his Epistles, the Apostle John spoke about God's true gospel and the saints' lives of light in the Truth.

The Apostle John himself also had to abide in the light of God to have fellowship with Him. So he questioned to the readers of this Epistle that whether or not they were abiding in the light of Truth to have fellowship with God. He, in other

words, wanted to have fellowship with them, but he made it clear to them that they first had to come into the God-given light of Truth.

The Apostle John wanted to share his faith with those who believe in the same Truth of light. And he said that it was possible only when they all had faith in the gospel Word of the water and the Spirit that has brought us salvation from our sins. If our faith is not the same but different from this faith that believes in this God-given gospel, then we cannot have sincere and true fellowship in Christ. This is why the Apostle John said, *“Truly our fellowship is with the Father and with His Son Jesus Christ” (1 John 1:3).*

Therefore, for any Christian to have true fellowship with other Christians, he must have the same faith that believes in the Word of Truth that has come by the gospel of the water and the Spirit. In Jesus Christ, we believe in the gospel of

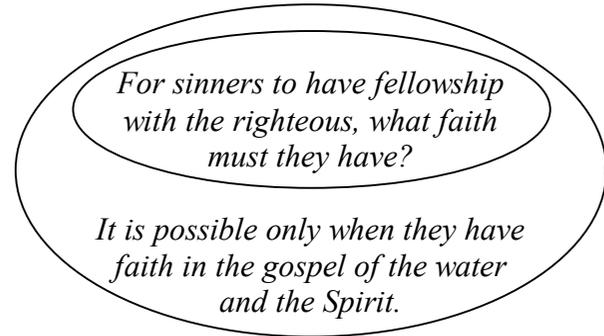


the water and the Spirit given by the Lord, and by this faith we had died together with Christ and have received new life with Him. Our Lord has given the Word of Truth to all of us, that we can all be washed from our sins with the gospel of the water and the Spirit.

My fellow believers, you must realize that even if you say that you believe in Jesus as your Savior, as long as you do not believe in the gospel of the water and the Spirit, and therefore your sins are not perfectly blotted out from your hearts, you cannot become God's children. If you do not believe in the light of Truth held in the gospel of the water and the Spirit, and therefore you have not become God's children, then it is not only impossible for you to have true fellowship with God, but it is also impossible for you to have any real fellowship with the born-again saints.

By having fellowship with those who believe

in the gospel of the salvation of Jesus Christ, the Apostle John wanted to have twice as much joy. John said, *“These things we write to you that your joy may be full”*(1 John 1:4). In our fellowship, it is when we are standing in the gospel of the water and the Spirit with the same faith that the joy for each of us can be full. Our joy can be doubled in the Lord when we share our fellowship in the gospel of the water and the Spirit.



It is absolutely impossible for sinners to have



fellowship with those who have received the remission of their sins. Why is this the case? It is because they are spiritually incompatible with the born-again, for they do not believe in the gospel of the water and the Spirit. But if they once believe in the gospel of the water and the Spirit, they can have true fellowship with the saints. At first, those who have not been born again may not easily understand when they hear what the believers in the gospel of the water and the Spirit say to them, but when they eventually come to understand later on, they also come to have true fellowship in Jesus Christ. Sinners find it difficult to understand what those who believe in the gospel of the water and the Spirit talk about. They even feel weird about the sayings and doings of the born-again at first.

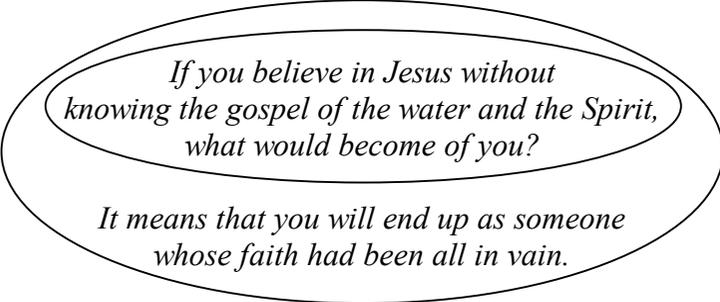
For us to have true fellowship with sinners, they must first believe in the gospel Truth of the water and the Spirit and come into the light of

Truth. To do so, they must know the gospel Truth of the water and the Spirit, and they must become true Christians. And for us to come into the light of Truth, we must first admit frankly who we really are. Sinners can reach the blessed faith in the gospel of the water and the Spirit only when they realize that they are on the verge of facing God's judgment for their sins.

To be delivered perfectly from their sins, in other words, sinners must first admit that they are evildoers by birth and are doomed to go to hell. And then, they have to believe in the gospel Truth of the water and the Spirit. This is the only and the right way to reach the Truth of salvation. We have to escape from all our sins and their condemnation, the result of the poison of sin inherited from Adam. This is possible only by believing in the gospel of the water and the Spirit. Only then can we return to Jesus Christ. Only when we become righteous by believing in



the gospel of the water and the Spirit can we have true fellowship with God. Only then can there be true family relations between God and His people, and among His servants and saints.



*If you believe in Jesus without knowing the gospel of the water and the Spirit, what would become of you?*

*It means that you will end up as someone whose faith had been all in vain.*

If you do not know the gospel of the water and the Spirit, which is the light of real Truth, even as you believe in Jesus as the Savior, just how futile would your faith be? This is why you must learn and know the gospel Truth of the water and the Spirit. And you must become someone who believes in this gospel Word of Truth. It is in the

true gospel Word of the water and the Spirit given by the Lord that we can know the real Truth of salvation, and it is by believing in this Truth that we can be remitted from all our sins and become whole forever.

The Bible says, “*Noah was a just man, perfect in his generations*” (Genesis 6:9). We have to first recognize that there were righteous people in the Bible. At that time, Noah became a just man by receiving the gift of salvation from God. In other words, by believing in the gospel of the water and the Spirit, we must also receive this gift of salvation that God has prepared for us. God also described Noah as being perfect in his generations because He had clothed him with the gift of His grace, of the washing of sin.

The Truth of salvation that God had given to Noah was fundamentally different from the doctrine of incremental sanctification that many of today’s Christians and denominations hold.



The God-given gift of salvation was His love.

*In which gospel do you believe?*

*Is it the gospel of the water and the Spirit,  
or do you believe in any other gospel?*

Do you believe in Jesus as your Savior? Whether or not you believe in the light of Truth, that Jesus has blotted out your sins with the power of the gospel of the water and the Spirit, is entirely up to you, but at the same time, you have to realize that all its consequences, whether to be blessed or cursed, will also be entirely determined by your choice.

Do you still believe only in the gospel of the blood of the Cross? Then, your consciences should be the first to know whether or not there are sins in your hearts. If you had believed until

now only in Jesus' blood on the Cross for you to be saved, then your sins would still be intact in your hearts. Is this not true? But if your souls had now believed in the gospel of the water and the Spirit, then you would have discovered the light of real Truth, of being born again.

What do you now think of the gospel of the water and the Spirit? Those who believe in the gospel of the water and the Spirit have no sin in their hearts. But the believers in incremental sanctification, an absolute majority of today's Christians, have the following misunderstanding: They think, "How can anyone so arrogantly claim to be sinless, when human beings sin all the time as they have the flesh?" They are sure that man can never be sinless on this earth, but God overlooks their sins because they believe in Jesus.

However, they must realize the fact that Jesus at once bore all the sins of this world, including



all our sins of the past, present, and future, through the baptism that He received from John the Baptist. And they must realize that it was because Jesus was baptized by John that He shed His blood on the Cross. Jesus Christ is the same Savior, yesterday and today and forever. By being baptized by John the Baptist, through which He took upon the sins of this world, and by going to the Cross and shedding His blood, Jesus has fulfilled all the righteousness of God at once. With the gospel of the water and the Spirit, our Lord has blotted out all the sins of this world once and for all.

Yet it is deeply saddening that so many Christians today are ignorant of these ministries of Jesus that have blotted out the sins of this world all at once. They are still questioning how the sins of the true believers in the gospel of the water and the Spirit could have been blotted out. Such people will remain as sinners even as they

believe in Jesus, for they do not know the gospel of the water and the Spirit, nor believe in it. Because they do not know the real gospel Truth of the water and the Spirit, they cannot truly wash away their sins by faith. I can only hope and pray that these people who believe only in the blood of the Cross as their salvation would come to believe in the gospel of the water and the Spirit and experience the true washing of sin.

The Apostle John was one of the true disciples of Jesus who believed in Him as his Savior. He received the gift of the true washing of sin by his faith in the baptism that Jesus Christ received from John the Baptist and His bloodshed on the Cross. Elsewhere in his Gospel writing, he also clearly testified the importance of Jesus' baptism by John the Baptist (John 1:29-34).

This very John now admonishes us the saints to have true fellowship with each other in the true light of salvation. What he admonishes



every one of you is to let the light of Truth illuminate your spirits, and to have fellowship each other in this Truth. If your hearts have indeed been illuminated by the light of salvation in the gospel of the water and the Spirit, then you, too, would have become holy saints by faith. The light of life is the truth that enables you to abide in Jesus Christ, and to also have true fellowship with each other in Jesus Christ.

### **What Will You Do If There Is Still Sin in Your Hearts Even As You Believe in Jesus?**

There are also so many people who, even as they believe in Jesus as the Savior, think that it is only natural for them to have sin. But such people still do not know how the true salvation

was fulfilled in the gospel of the water and the Spirit, which was completed in God's light of Truth. These people may think that their fellowship with God is entirely up to them, but they will come to realize that this is not the case in reality. With this kind of faith, they cannot come before God even as they try, nor are they able to move closer to Him through their prayers, for there is sin in their hearts. So seeing themselves, they can only lament over their misery.

If you are still sinners before God, then you should confess to Him frankly that you are under the punishment of sin, and admit that the gospel of the water and the Spirit is the light of true salvation. It is clear that anyone who still has sin in his heart is not a child of God, regardless of whether he believes in Jesus or not. When we believe in Jesus as our Savior, we must believe in this true gospel. When you believe that this Jesus



Christ has blotted out your sins and given you salvation through the gospel of the water and the Spirit, you can be delivered from your sins. And this faith of yours can be approved before the holy God.

Today, we see that many Christians are trying to receive the remission of their sins and enter the Kingdom of Heaven by believing in the doctrines that each denomination has established. But through such mad-made religious and doctrinal faith, their sins cannot be blotted out. Only when they know the gospel of the water and the Spirit written in the Bible, and believe in this Word of Truth, can all their sins be blotted out. When we realize that Jesus Christ is the Savior who has come by the gospel of the water and the Spirit, and believe in Him with our hearts, the perfect salvation is fulfilled to us. The faith of the Apostle John, too, was also one that believed in the gospel of the water and the Spirit

(1John 5:3-7). We should examine our faith whether it is the faith in the gospel of the water and the Spirit from God or the religious and doctrinal faith from human thoughts

If you have sin in your hearts even as profess to believe in Jesus, then you are someone who still has no true fellowship with God. Though you say yourselves that you believe in Jesus as the Savior, you have not come into the light of salvation yet, and therefore there is no true fellowship with God. This is why you end up living in so much pain. Such people must confess, “Lord, I am still a sinner. Because I had not known the gospel of the water and the Spirit that You had given me, there had been no true fellowship with You yet. Lord, please have mercy on me, and allow me to know the gospel Truth of the water and the Spirit. Lord, because my sins still remain in my heart, I am under the wrath of sin and terrifying punishment,” and they



must believe in the gospel of the water and the Spirit.

Only then can you have true fellowship with Jesus Christ. For you to do so, you must stand firm on the faith that clearly knows and believes in the gospel of the water and the Spirit. Through the faith that believes in this gospel Truth, you must be remitted from all your sins once for all and abide in the light of salvation.

Today, the reality for many Christians is that even as they believe in Jesus and go on with their lives of faith, they have not yet received the true washing of their sins from their ignorance of the gospel of the water and the Spirit. Most of them have not even admitted God's law that declares, "the wages of sin is death," and as a result, they are carrying on with their lives of faith without even realizing that they are sinners on the verge of facing God's punishment.

What is the reason for the secular people of

this world to dislike Christians so much? It is because Christians have failed to become the light to this world. They can't radiate God's light because they have failed to become the light by not believing in the gospel of the water and the Spirit. And as a result, they are prone to hide themselves in hypocrisy instead.

Moreover, even at this moment, many Christians think of Christianity as merely one of the many religions of this world, and believe in it as such. So there lies another reason as to why the unbelievers dislike Christians. It is because Christians usually say that they wash away their daily sins by giving their prayers of repentance. Because of this kind of religious doctrines, which is no different from the worldly faith, there is a tendency for non-Christians to dislike Jesus Christ in whom such Christians believe. Non-Christians think, "How convenient it is for them. They sin against their fellow human beings, and



yet they say that all that they need to do is give a prayer of repentance just once and admit their wrongdoings to God. What a convenient religion!” So they dislike such Christians.

And there are people who say that they’ve renounced to believe in Jesus because their daily sins could not be washed away even as they have said prayers of repentance continuously. Christian sinners are easily drawn to tears when they give their prayers of repentance. They cannot but be sad, for they are still imprisoned in the darkness of sin and are unable to really receive any actual help from God. Because they do not believe in the gospel of the water and the Spirit, they still have not received the eternal remission of their sins even as they believe in Jesus Christ, and therefore they still have not discovered the light of real Truth. It is only in their emotions that they want God’s mercy and are crying.

How have they come to have such an emotion-centered and futile faith? It is because they have been suffering from their sins, and because they cannot understand the Word of God even as they read it, that they rely so heavily on their own emotions to express their reckless fervor. However, with such zealous faith that they hold, the fruits of salvation cannot be born, but only foolish and futile fruits of sin are born. Because they have sin, they cannot bear the fruits of the Holy Spirit even as they try to bear them, nor can they truly love others no matter how hard they try.

Those who still remain as sinners cannot lead a successful life of faith no matter how hard they try. Why is that? It is because they still do not know the gospel of the water and the Spirit that enables them to receive the remission of sin by washing away their sins, nor believe in this gospel.



Those who are yet to receive the remission of sin into their hearts must now meet the servants of God who hold God's light of Truth. And they must listen to their teachings on the gospel Truth to receive the remission of their sins into their hearts. If you truly want to live your lives of faith with completely sinless hearts and calling God as your Father, you need to wholeheartedly believe in the Truth of the gospel Word of the water and the Spirit given by the Lord with all your hearts. When you believe in the true gospel, you will discover and receive the light of Truth. This is why the Lord calls the born-again as the light of the world (Matthew 5:14).

Our Lord said that a tree is discerned by its fruits. If humans are indeed sinners from their very birth, then they can never become righteous unless they believe in the gospel of the water and the Spirit. If someone who still has sin in his heart says that he believes in Jesus as the Savior,

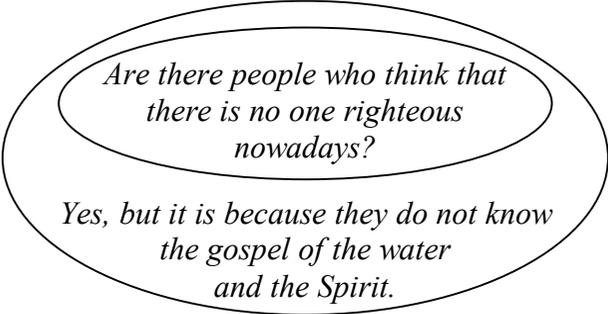
he will be revealed as a liar before God, for his faith is a false one. As such people do not know the gospel of the water and the Spirit, they do not believe in the love of Truth with their hearts, and therefore they still remain as sinners. Yet they act as if they have been transformed from sinners into the righteous. This, however, is only an act of hypocrisy that deceives God, people, and themselves. Such people are chaffs even if they are attending God's Church.

If one does not have the fruits of the Holy Spirit, then this person is someone who still does not know the gospel of the water and the Spirit. He can then live only if he remembers that he is a sinner and believes in the gospel of the water and the Spirit. Without doing so, one cannot receive the Holy Spirit. Those believers in the gospel of the water and the Spirit are led by God, for the Holy Spirit dwells in their hearts. But for sinners, because the Holy Spirit does not dwell in their



hearts, they are not led by the Word of God but instead live according to their lusts, and therefore they will perish in the end.

Once you have become righteous by faith before God, then you will bear the fruits of your faith, when enough time goes by. The righteous have the gospel Word of the water and the Spirit that can bring salvation from sin to others. Those who have received the remission of their sins can boldly say before others that because they believe in the gospel of the water and the Spirit, they are now righteous.



*Are there people who think that  
there is no one righteous  
nowadays?*

*Yes, but it is because they do not know  
the gospel of the water  
and the Spirit.*

Romans 3:10 says, “*There is none righteous, no, not one,*” and people have misunderstood this passage. This passage actually speaks about the condition of mankind before believing in the gospel of the water and the Spirit. We can realize this when we read the next following passages.

The Bible says that when we were sinners, Jesus Christ turned us sinless by delivering us from sin with the righteousness of God. No matter who asks, those who have received the remission of sin can say that they are righteous. Someone may ask to the righteous, “Are all your acts then upright?” They can testify that though they are insufficient, because Jesus has blotted out all their sins with the gospel Truth of the water and the Spirit, they have been remitted from all their sins once for all by faith. Because all their sins were passed onto Jesus through His baptism, and therefore they can say that they are now sinless. Those who have this kind of faith are the ones



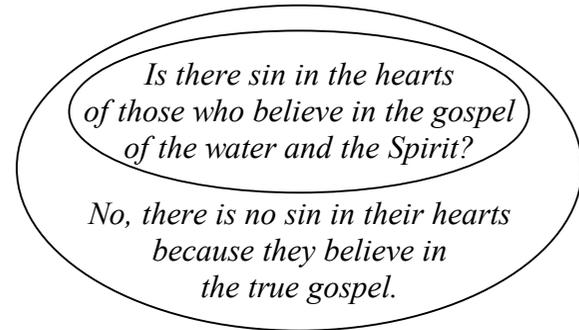
who can be led by the Holy Spirit, for they abide in the light of Truth and bear the fruits of the Holy Spirit.

In contrast, those who do not believe in the gospel Truth of the water and the Spirit cannot dare to say before God that they are without sin, for all their sins remain intact in their hearts. This is akin to the fact that every tree bears its fruits according to its kind. Just as thorn bushes bear thorns, it is only a matter of fact that apple trees would bear apples. The righteous continually offer the sacrifice of praise to God, that is, the fruit of their lips, giving thanks to His name (Hebrews 13:15). What is the fruit of lips of the Christian sinners? Do they praise God from the bottom of their hearts? Do they profess by faith that they have no sin in Jesus Christ?

The reason why they cannot sincerely profess that they are without sin is because they do not believe in the gospel of the water and the Spirit,

and therefore their sins remain in their hearts. Such people say that although they profess that they have been saved from their sins, they cannot claim to be without sin, since their hearts still have sin.

Everyone must believe in the gospel Word of the water and the Spirit and become sinless. He who walks in the light of the Truth is one who believes in the gospel of the water and the Spirit, the gospel of salvation that Jesus spoke of, and in whose heart the Holy Spirit dwells because of this faith.



In the hearts of those who have become God's own children, would there be sin or not? There is, of course, no sin. The Lord's Prayers says, "Our Father in heaven, Hallowed be Your name. Your Kingdom come...." God is holy, and He is light. He has no darkness at all, and has no sin, either.

How, then, could our Lord be glorified when someone who has sin in his heart says to Him, "Our Father in heaven, hallowed and glorified be Your name"? When someone who has sin in his heart prays to God, "Our God the Father, who has mercy and grace, and who is slow to be provoked to anger, this sinner now stands before you," can such a prayer be accepted by God? This kind of prayer and faith is what blasphemies the name of God, something that makes mockery out of prayer by someone who is not even God's child. In no time has God ever had a sinner as His child. God is sinless. The Lord's Prayer is

telling us that God can be glorified only when we first receive, through the gospel of the water and the Spirit, the remission of our sins and become righteous, and are therefore able to call God as our Father.

It is written in the following passage of the Lord's Prayer, "Forgive us our debts, as we forgive our debtors." This passage tells us that even those who have been remitted from their sins can still commit sin, for they have the flesh. However, we have already been remitted from even those sins with the gospel of the water and the Spirit. Therefore, this passage is telling us that just as our Lord has forgiven all our sins, we who believe in this beautiful gospel must also tolerate each other's mistakes. If we believe in the gospel of the water and the Spirit, shouldn't we forgive each other's faults as well? God will surely rebuke us if we do not tolerate each other.

Today's scripture lesson of 1 John 1 speaks to



those who have received the remission of their sins by believing in the gospel of the water and the Spirit. Our Lord dwells in the hearts of the children of light, the righteous, and makes them never thirst again. We are the servants of Christ who, by infusing our hearts with the gospel of the water and the Spirit at all times, are faithful to the Lord who has cleansed us from our sins. Though we have been perfectly remitted from our sins by believing in the gospel of the water and the Spirit, this does not mean that we no longer commit any sin. On the contrary, we discover even more shortcomings in us. But because the gospel Truth of the water and the Spirit has washed away our sins, we are without sin.

All transgressions and lawlessness, however, are sins before God. For example, when you throw dirt into a clean spring, the water in the spring temporarily turns into brownish, murky

mud. But we do not necessarily call this spring a filthy spring. Because it is purified clean by the fresh water that continues to well up from its bottom, we still call this a clean spring.

Even after receiving the remission of our sins, there are still times when our hearts are soiled by the world, but we purify these stained hearts clean by believing in the true gospel Word of the water and the Spirit. Just as water continues to surge from the bottom of a spring and turns impure water into pure water, those who believe in the gospel Word of the water and the Spirit are always cleansed from all their transgressions by this faith. None other than this is the power of those who believe in the gospel of the water and the Spirit. If someone professes to believe in the gospel of the water and the Spirit, but still has sin in his mind, this can only mean that he has been neither saved from his sins, nor become the true light. Only the sinless who truly believe in the



gospel of the water and the Spirit like the Apostle John can be said to have become the true light. The Apostle John could be ordained as a servant of God, for he first believed in the gospel of the water and the Spirit. Only those who have washed away all their sins by believing in the gospel of the water and the Spirit can become God's servants.

So did the Apostle Paul. Before he became God's servant, he had indeed been a blasphemer who persecuted Christians. After he was born again, he identified his former self as "a blasphemer, a persecutor, an insolent man and the chief of sinners" (1 Timothy 1:13-15). As a matter of fact, he had persecuted the believers in Jesus so much, but he came to believe that the Lord Jesus had cleansed away all his sin through the gospel of the water and the Spirit. This is how the Apostle Paul became God's servant by believing in Jesus Christ who became his Savior.

He once confessed his evil deeds before King Agrippa: *"Indeed, I myself thought I must do many things contrary to the name of Jesus of Nazareth. This I also did in Jerusalem, and many of the saints I shut up in prison, having received authority from the chief priests; and when they were put to death, I cast my vote against them. And I punished them often in every synagogue and compelled them to blaspheme; and being exceedingly enraged against them, I persecuted them even to foreign cities"* (Acts 26:9-11).

Put differently, reflecting upon the acts that he had committed before receiving the remission of sin, the Apostle Paul described himself as the "chief among sinners." Even as he had been the chief villain among all sinners, thanks to God's long patience, he came to discover the gospel light of the water and the Spirit and to receive the remission of sin. He is testifying that this is how, by believing in the true gospel, he became God's



servant.

In other words, the Apostle Paul is admitting here that before he was born again, he was the chief among sinners. But after encountering the Lord and being born again by faith, he became a righteous man without any sin in his heart.

In a word, if someone has any sin in his heart even after believing in Jesus, he must be a liar, and the Word of God cannot be planted in his heart. For instance, when one's house is full with guests, no more guests can enter it. Just like this, when one holds onto the fallacious Christian doctrines, the gospel of the water and the Spirit cannot enter into his heart. This is why such a person must therefore abandon his flawed faith.

In today's Scripture passage, the Apostle John says first to the righteous how to recover their lives of light when they are falling into darkness. But this passage is also spoken to the sinners who have no fellowship with God: They must

first confess that they are not the light, but darkness, and are doomed to hell. God will then meet them and cleanse away all their sins with the gospel of the water and the Spirit, making them His children of light.

In God's Church, true confession is to reveal oneself as he really is. But repentance is to turn around. Confession and repentance are clearly two different things. Your sins cannot be remitted away if you only repent them. If you have sin in your hearts, confess who you really are by admitting that you are sinners. The Lord will then wash away all your sins with the gospel light of the water and the Spirit. This is the reason why the Lord came to this earth as the Savior of sinners.

This very name Jesus means the Savior, as it is written, "*And she will bring forth a Son, and you shall call His name JESUS, for He will save His people from their sins*" (Matthew 1:21). When



we fall into sin, Jesus came to this world, and blotted out all our sins with His baptism and bloodshed; and believing in this Truth is the faith that leads you to perfect salvation. The Apostle John, as a righteous man, preached so that sinners could receive the remission of their sins to become the righteous, and, on the other hand, he also admonished the righteous to lead the proper life of light.

True confession is to confess that one is simply a mass of sin that cannot avoid but sin. The premise of true confession is found in believing in the gospel of the water and the Spirit that Jesus has given us to remit away our sins. And after receiving the remission of our sins by believing in this beautiful gospel, for us to walk uprightly in the light of God is to live our lives as true Christians.

We the saints, too, must turn around if there is something wrong in our lives, and this is the true

repentance in life. Human beings are bound to commit all kinds of sins. This is why our Lord took away the sins of the world by being baptized. Those who say that they have not sinned even after committing transgressions and breaking the Word of God (1 John 1:10), have the kind of faith that is only religious. There is no room in such people for the Word of God to enter, and therefore they are bound to destruction.

Like the Apostle John, only the righteous can have fellowship with God and with their fellow saints. The Apostle John, a righteous man, says in 1 John 2:2 that Jesus took upon all the sins of the world once for all through His baptism. And Jesus also became our Advocate who pleads for us with His perfect gospel before God the Father. My dear fellow Christians, above all, you must first have faith in God. And believe in the gospel of the water and the Spirit with your hearts. God



will then teach you and nourish your souls through His Church so that you can live your lives as the true light.

The Apostle John is now telling us about the gospel of the water and the Spirit, which is God's love. He is saying to us, "*That which we have seen and heard we declare to you, that you also may have fellowship with us.*" He was a witness who had seen Jesus Christ with his own eyes, heard Him with his ears, and touched Him with his hands. He is now admonishing all of us that we must believe in the gospel of the water and the Spirit that Jesus Christ had given to the Apostles, and we must all thereby be saved and come to have fellowship with God.

Where does our fellowship with God come from? It comes from the love of God the Father who was with Jesus Christ. Therefore, if we want to have fellowship with the Apostle John or the servants of God and His born-again saints, we

must all be with God the Father and His Son Jesus Christ. To do so, there must be the same faith as that of His disciples, and it is then that we can have fellowship with Jesus Christ. This is why in the faith of those who believe in the gospel of the water and the Spirit, there is fellowship, and each other's joy is doubled as a result. I want all of us to truly believe in the gospel of the water and the Spirit given by Jesus Christ and have true fellowship with each other.

The fellowship with Jesus Christ that we yearn to have is possible only through the gospel of the water and the Spirit that is in God's love. It is by believing in the gospel of the water and the Spirit that we can also become His people.

I give eternal thanks to Jesus Christ for saving His believers from all their sins through the baptism that He received and His bloodshed on the Cross. ☒



# **CHAPTER 1**

---

## **SERMON 3**

**(1 John 1:8-10)**

**“Two Sorts of Confession”**



Contents



## Two Sorts of Confession

< 1 John 1:8-10 >

**“If we say that we have no sin, we deceive ourselves, and the truth is not in us. If we confess our sins, He is faithful and just to forgive us our sins and to cleanse us from all unrighteousness. If we say that we have not sinned, we make Him a liar, and His word is not in us.”**

*Do you find it difficult to understand today's Scripture passage?*

*If yes, that is because you do not understand the gospel Truth of the water and the Spirit.*

All the Word of God is life and truth for those who believe. But for those who have not been born again, it may bring them confusion instead, as they misunderstand and misinterpret the Word of God. The passage from 1 John 1:8-10 that we just read can become the Word of amazing truth to those who believe in Jesus as their Savior and enrich their souls, but at the same time, if it is misapplied, it may bring confusion to people's thoughts and faith.

This is because the passage leads us to wonder whether it is applicable to the people of God who have received the remission of their sins, or to those who are yet to receive the remission of sin. If you have received the remission of your sins by believing in the gospel Word of the water and the Spirit, misunderstanding this passage may lead you to question how it is possible that you would once again have sin in your hearts. So to both the righteous who believe in the gospel of



the water and the Spirit and sinners alike, this passage can potentially bring doubts and confusion.

## Applying This Passage to Sinners

First of all, we need to apply this passage to those who still have sin in their hearts by not believing in the gospel of the water and the Spirit. The question here is whether it is possible for those who do not believe in the gospel of the water and the Spirit to wash away the sins that they have committed just by giving their prayers of confession. Some people say that whenever they give their prayers of confession, or prayers of repentance, God the Father forgives their sins.

But the reality is that even as they give their prayers of confession and repentance, all the sins that they have committed still remain unwashed

and intact in their hearts (Jeremiah 2:22). They've come up with such completely groundless doctrines and believe in them only to comfort themselves, just because they themselves, in their own thoughts, want to believe that God the Father would somehow forgive them, as fathers would usually forgive their children when they just confess their wrongdoings.

The fact of the matter, however, is that for those who give such prayers of confession, their sins still remain in the tablet of their hearts, testifying that they themselves still remain under the condemnation of God. It is written in Jeremiah 17:1, *“The sin of Judah is written with a pen of iron; With the point of a diamond it is engraved on the tablet of their heart, and on the horns of your altars.”* You may know that the representative principle pervades all Scriptures. Therefore, this passage should also be applied to



all mankind, meaning that everyone's sin is written on the tablet of his heart with an iron pen. We see that for those who do not believe in the gospel of the water and the Spirit, the sins that they have committed are engraved in the table of their hearts.

Therefore, it is not the case that one can wash away all his sins from the tablet of his heart just by confessing them. Yet unfortunately, most people today, referring to today's passage from 1 John, think that even those who do not believe in the gospel of the water and the Spirit can still wash away their sins just by confessing them. However, when people come to know and believe in the gospel of the water and the Spirit, they can also find answer to their questions about the prayers of confession of sin.

Today, many people claim to believe in Jesus. But most of them still have sin in their hearts, and therefore are not qualified to call God as

their Father. This makes them give up their lives of faith down the road. Because they still do not know the gospel Truth of the water and the Spirit, they have fallen into spiritual confusion and believe in Jesus just like the religionists of this world, and this is why they ultimately end up renouncing their faith. Since they do not know that the baptism of Jesus took away the sins of the world, they simply cannot escape from the mire of confusion no matter how hard they try. Therefore, to escape from their confusion, they must first realize that Jesus bore the sins of the world through the baptism He received from John.

Everyone must admit all the weaknesses of his flesh and come to have, through the Word of Truth, the experience of faith that enables his soul to be freed from all his sins. Ever since the Early Church Age, whoever believed in the gospel Word of the water and the Spirit could



receive God's salvation, and this is how the saints came to praise the Lord. We see that those who believe in the gospel of the water and the Spirit, like the Apostle John, can bring abundant joy to God.

Without our faith in the gospel of the water and the Spirit, we cannot have true fellowship with God. So it is only in the gospel of the water and the Spirit that true confession before God is feasible, and it is only through God's amazing gospel Truth of the water and the Spirit that this true confession can be made. We must all give thanks to our Lord for enabling us to make such true confession of sin through our faith in the gospel of the water and the Spirit.

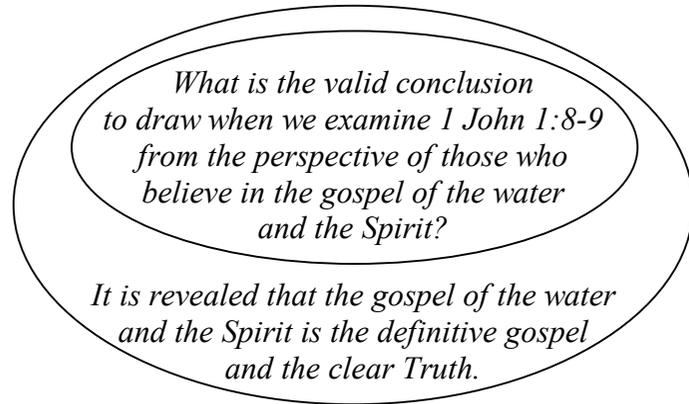
From now on, we must not look down on the faith that believes in the baptism of Jesus. People must be freed from futile Christian doctrines claiming that it is possible to be saved from sin just by believing in the blood of the Cross. And

they must return to the faith that believes in both the baptism of Jesus and the blood of the Cross as the way of salvation. From now on, you must become the kind of Christians who yearn to learn and believe in the gospel Truth of the water and the Spirit. All of us must understand how Jesus felt when He had to take upon the sins of the world by being baptized by John the Baptist. We must understand and believe in the amazing Truth of salvation, that it was because Jesus was baptized by John the Baptist that He had to shed His precious blood on the Cross.

You must realize that it is when you know and believe in the gospel Truth of the water and the Spirit that you can become proper Christians (1 John 5:3-7) and can also confess to God properly from then on (Matthew 3:15, 1 Peter 3:21, Romans 6:2-5). I praise the Lord for giving us the gospel Truth of the water and the Spirit. I praise the Lord for delivering us from all the sins



of the world through the gospel of the water and the Spirit, and for moving us to the everlasting Kingdom of Heaven. By believing in this true gospel, all of us must forever walk with Jesus Christ.

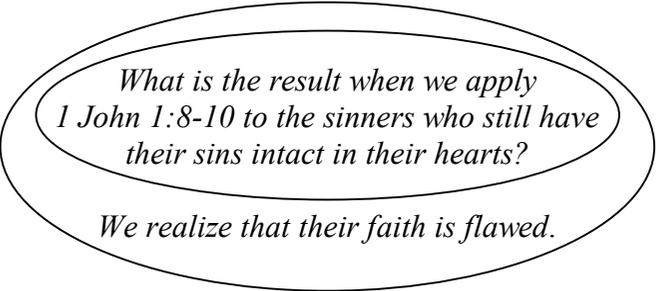


I will explain today's Scripture passage from 1 John 1:8-10 from two different perspectives: one that is applicable to those who believe in the

gospel of the water and the Spirit, and one that is applicable to those who do not believe in this gospel. I take this approach because the Bible itself is speaking to two different kinds of people.

One of them is those who still have sin in their hearts from their failure to know the true gospel Word of the water and the Spirit, and the other is those whose hearts have become sinless by believing in this gospel of the water and the Spirit. The Lord is speaking to each of these two kinds of people about the need for prayers of confession. All of us have the duty to preach the gospel Word of the water and the Spirit and the truth of real confession to everyone, Christian and non-Christian alike. This is why the Lord spoke this passage from 1 John 1:8-10 to each of these two kinds of people.





*What is the result when we apply  
1 John 1:8-10 to the sinners who still have  
their sins intact in their hearts?*

*We realize that their faith is flawed.*

First of all, when we apply today's Scripture passage from 1 John 1:8-10 to those who are ignorant of the gospel of the water and the Spirit, we discover an amazing fact. Most Christians believe themselves to have been saved from their sins by merely professing Jesus as their Savior, even though their sins still remain in their hearts. But because there still remains sin in their hearts, there is no way for them to escape from God's judgment. In fact, they have no choice but to live under the wrath of God, for they have not been saved from their sins.

They cannot boldly claim before the Lord that they are sinless because they don't have the Truth that gives them conviction. However, the born-again can profess boldly that they have no sin in their hearts, because the true gospel did not come to them in word only, but also in power, and in the Holy Spirit and in much assurance (1 Thessalonians 1:5). So the Apostle John is now warning those who still have sin in their hearts even as they believe in Jesus. He is saying, in other words, that no one can say that he has received the remission of sin into his heart, unless he has first become sinless by believing in the gospel Word of the water and the Spirit.

The Apostle John declared, "*God is light*" (1 John 1:5). By this passage, he wanted to reveal that God had cleansed all sinners from their sins with the gospel of the water and the Spirit and made them His holy people. So you need to first examine your hearts closely and see if you really



have the knowledge of the gospel of the water and the Spirit. If you never had a chance to learn about the God-given gospel Word of the water and the Spirit, and this is why you are ignorant of this gospel, all that you have to do is read the first volume of my Christian book series, entitled *“Have You Truly Been Born Again of Water and the Spirit?”* (Hephzibah Publishing House, 1998).

On the other hand, if you do not believe in the gospel of the water and the Spirit even as you heard and understood it, rather than because you do not know it, I ask that you examine your hearts to see whether they are upright or not, and believe in this gospel Truth of the water and the Spirit. If you know and believe in the gospel Truth of the water and the Spirit, you can truly say that your hearts are sinless. But if you do not believe in this gospel even as you know it, and if you say, even as you remain sinful, “I am sinless

because I believe in Jesus and in the doctrine of predestination,” you will eventually come to realize that you have actually ended up as liars before God.

The Apostle John eagerly sought to preach the gospel Word of the water and the Spirit to a certain group of people who profess to believe in Jesus. We can see this clearly from the passage where John declared God to be light. He implied in this declaration that in the Early Church, there were people who had not received the remission of sin because they had refused to believe in the gospel of the water and the Spirit, and that as a result, they became the liars who were deceiving themselves and God.

The Apostle John was one who truly believed in the gospel Word of the water and the Spirit (1 John 5:5-7). He knew and believed as well that Jesus, by being baptized by John the Baptist, fulfilled all the righteousness of God, and by



doing so Jesus took upon the sins of the world and washed away, all at once, the iniquities of those who believe. This is why the Apostle John described Jesus Christ in 1 John 5:6 as He who came *“not only by water, but by water and blood.”* This means that John believed both the baptism of Jesus and the blood of the Cross to be the essentials of our salvation.

From his point of view, those who profess to believe in Jesus without knowing the gospel of the water and the Spirit will unintentionally end up as liars before God. In other words, those who believe only in Jesus' bloodshed on the Cross are inadvertently turning themselves into liars. Although they say with their lips that they believe in Jesus as their Savior, because their sins remain in their hearts, they are unable to grasp the power of the true prayers of confession. All their prayers of confession are futile. For them to truly give their prayers of confession, they must

first believe in the gospel of the water and the Spirit. As the Apostle John believed in the gospel of the water and the Spirit, he provided a reinterpretation of true confession through the Word of truth found in 1 John 1:8-10 to those who neither know nor believe in the gospel of the water and the Spirit.

He is telling them, in other words, that if they now claim to have no sin before Jesus Christ without even having any faith in the gospel of the water and the Spirit, they are actually sinning against Him. Therefore, they must first learn the gospel of the water and the Spirit that the Apostle John believed in, and then also learn how to give the true prayers of confession by believing in the gospel of the water and the Spirit.

Many Christians in this world still think that they believe in Jesus even as they remain ignorant of the gospel Truth of the water and the Spirit. They are unintentionally deceiving



themselves and trying to deceive even God, because they are under autohypnosis. Such people believe only in the blood of the Cross, and cannot but live their lives with the faith of deception.

Therefore, all those who have sin in their hearts, regardless of whether they confess Jesus as their Savior or not, must first believe in the gospel Truth of the water and the Spirit. Only then can they give thanks to God. As such, to give the proper prayers of confession to God, you must first believe in the gospel Truth of the water and the Spirit.

What should you believe? Should you believe only in the sacrifice of the Cross that you had already believed and known? Or should you believe in both the baptism Jesus received from John the Baptist and the blood of the Cross? Which gospel, in other words, do you think is the right one?

In John 3:1-10, Jesus said that to enter Heaven, one must be born again of water and the Spirit. All of us must therefore receive the remission of our sins by believing in the gospel of the water and the Spirit. Those who have not received the remission of sin must first confess, “God, though I believe in Jesus as my Savior, my heart still has sin. I admit that I cannot avoid but be condemned by You for my sins. Please deliver me from all my sins and all my punishment of sin.” This is how they must pray. God will then give them the gospel Word of the water and the Spirit, the Truth of salvation that He has prepared for such people, and save them. You must pray to the Lord. Sinners must first pray to the Lord to save them from all their sins, so that they may become the ones who can make true confession of the born-again to God.

You must first have the knowledge of the gospel of the water and the Spirit, thereby



washing away all your sins by faith and becoming the ones who dwell in God's light. If you have this true gospel and believe in this with your hearts, you can be washed from all the sins that had been in your hearts till now. In this gospel of the water and the Spirit is found the Truth that enables everyone to be washed from all his sins. It is when we truly believe in the gospel of the water and the Spirit that our heart can truly become sinless.

What we must realize here is that anyone who says to God that he has no sin without even having this faith in the gospel of the water and the Spirit is simply lying to his own conscience. Such people are no more than liars, and they are the kind of people who, frankly speaking, don't even intend to believe in Him.

*Are all humans the kind  
of being that cannot but sin?*

*Yes. This is why we all need the gospel  
of the water and the Spirit with  
which our Lord has washed  
away our sins.*

That everyone was fundamentally born with many sins into this world is an undeniable truth and fact. There is no one who was born without sin. This is why all have come to sin against God as they live their lives, and this is why all must confess that they are grave sinners.

Therefore, all those who claim to have no sin even as they have sin in their hearts, as well as those who claim not to have sinned, are arrogant and insolent ones before God. You must be conscious of the Omniscient God. With His Law, God is clearly pointing out that we have



committed all our sins, thus telling us that everyone is a sinner who sin against God at all times. If, despite this, there still are those who say to God that they have never sinned (1 John 1:10), do they not realize that this in itself makes them liars before God?

Anyone who says that he has not sinned is someone who rejects the love of God and makes a mockery of Him. God said to all of us that we are of those who always commit sin (Mark 7:21-23). He is telling us that we were therefore born with all the ingredients of sin. Even so, if anyone still says to God that he does not sin, he is someone who does not take God seriously, who rejects His Truth, and who is therefore asking to fall into the mire of destruction. No one must do this.

Therefore, when we apply the passage from 1 John 1:8-10 to the hearts of today's Christians who still remain as sinners, we can see that all

their faith runs counter to the Word of God, and that they are lying to Him and committing a great sin against Him. The key point of this passage demonstrates to us that if anyone who has not received the remission of sin claims to have no sin in his heart, he is deceiving not only himself but also God, and that such people cannot but reveal that they are lying, for the gospel Word of the water and the Spirit is still not found in their hearts.

One thing that we must clearly realize before God is that even if we were to confess our sins, unless we have the knowledge of and faith in the gospel of the water and the Spirit, our sins do not disappear. Put differently, the only way that you can become aware all your sins and be washed from them before God is to have the knowledge of the gospel Truth of the water and the Spirit that the Lord has permitted to you and me, and to have faith in this Truth. It is when you have this



very knowledge and keep this Truth in your hearts by faith that you can wash away all your sins and become God's children.

All of us must remember what the Lord said in John 8:32, *"You shall know the truth, and the truth shall make you free."* We need to realize that though all of us have sinned before God, because we believe in Jesus as our true Savior and have the knowledge of the gospel of the water and the Spirit, we have been saved from all our sins. God never regards those who have sin in their hearts as sinless. Therefore, we must all keep in our hearts the knowledge of the gospel of the water and the Spirit given by the Lord, and we must all believe in it. And then, through the knowledge of the gospel of the water and the Spirit, all of us must realize the meaning of the true prayers of confession of the born-again.

*Is God truly faithful?*

*Yes. The Lord is so faithful that He has blotted out all our sins committed throughout our entire lifetime with the gospel of the water and the Spirit.*

## **Applying This Passage to the Righteous**

Let us then now apply 1 John 1:9 to the righteous who believe in the gospel of the water and the Spirit. It is written in 1 John 1:9-10, *"If we confess our sins, He is faithful and just to forgive us our sins and to cleanse us from all unrighteousness. If we say that we have not sinned, we make Him a liar, and His word is not in us."*



Those who believe in the gospel Word of the water and the Spirit know that the Lord has already and at once washed away all the sins that they commit out of their insufficiencies as they live in this world, and that He has thereby saved them. Because they firmly believe in this Truth, their hearts can be kept by the powerful gospel Word of the water and the Spirit, when they confess all their sins by their faith in the true gospel. Even though we sin everyday, whenever we confess our sins by faith in the gospel of the water and the Spirit, Jesus Christ, our Advocate, declares to us that He had already blotted out even these very sins over 2,000 years ago with His baptism and bloodshed on the Cross. As such, those who are born again of the water and the Spirit can take the gospel Truth, by faith, as the evidence of the fact that their hearts have been remitted from their sins, as white as snow.

By applying 1 John 1:9 to themselves, the

righteous can confirm the grace of salvation that all these sins were already washed away by the Lord, whenever they confess their daily sins on the basis of the gospel of the water and the Spirit. The phrase in verse 9, "*He is faithful and just,*" means that the Lord has already blotted out all the future transgressions of the righteous with the power of the gospel of the water and the Spirit that He has given us. This phrase also implies that the Lord has saved us, who could not but sin out of our insufficiencies, from all our sins, through the gospel of the water and the Spirit.

The righteous also sin everyday, but they cannot become sinners once again by being swept by their personal sins, because they can edify their knowledge of the Truth more concretely by confessing their sins within the power of the gospel of the water and the Spirit. Like this, the passage of I John 1:9 provides the power of the gospel of the water and the Spirit to



the born-again whenever they confess their sins in the Truth.

God had promised in the Old Testament that He would save us from all the sins of the world, and when the time came, He wanted to fulfill this promise of salvation through Jesus Christ. Therefore, the Lord came to this earth, took upon all the sins of this world by being baptized by John the Baptist, shed His blood on the Cross while carrying all the iniquities of sinners, rose from the dead again, and has thereby washed away all our sins once for all—thus fulfilling His promise once for all.

*What does 1 John 1:9  
reveal to us?*

*It reveals that with the gospel of the water and  
the Spirit, the Lord has remitted away even  
all our personal sins.*

1 John 1:9 manifests the Truth that the Lord has blotted out all our personal sins with the power of the gospel of the water and the Spirit. Our Lord has already blotted out all the sins of this world with the power of this true gospel. This means, therefore, that all the sins committed by those who believe in the gospel of the water and the Spirit have already been washed away by the power of the Word. For the righteous also sin at all times while living in this world, they must always look toward the gospel power of the water and the Spirit, and trust in the Word of Truth that has washed away all these sins by frankly confessing all the sins that they commit.

Although we are righteous, before God, we are no more than such weak beings who cannot but sin against Him everyday. This is why placing our faith in the power of the water and the Spirit, we must look toward the Lord who has sanctified us. Unless we do so, we will turn into



foolish religionists. Though we are righteous, we also need to confess our sins within the faith based on the Word. By doing so, we can keep our hearts clean consistently.

It is written, “*There is not a just man on earth who does good and does not sin*” (*Ecclesiastes 7:20*). This means that even the righteous sin against God all the time. Therefore, for all of us also, it is only right to make the proper confession of our sins whenever we commit them by placing our faith in the gospel Word of the water and the Spirit. What we must all realize before God is that no one can have his sins blotted out just by confessing them, but it is only when his confession is based on his faith placed in the gospel Word of the water and the Spirit that his sins are washed away.

Since we the righteous have the God-given gospel of the water and the Spirit, we must get our daily sins resolved by our faith in this gospel.

The righteous whom I am speaking of here refer to those who have faith in the gospel of the water and the Spirit. Our faith is one that believes in the gospel Word of the water and the Spirit, and this faith is like depositing a huge amount of money in a bank, to be drawn for our use from time to time. When you and I have faith in the gospel of the water and the Spirit before God, and when we show this faith to Him and come before Him by this faith, we can continue to have true fellowship with this holy God regardless of our insufficiencies.

Even if we are the born-again Christians, unless we confess our daily sins and confirm once again that the Lord has blotted out all our sins with the gospel Truth of the water and the Spirit, there can be no true fellowship with God. Because we sin at all times, for us to have true fellowship with God, it is absolutely necessary to make daily confessions of our sins.



## **Let Us Then Once again Apply This Word of Truth to Those Who Still Remain as Sinners**

For those who still have not come into the light of God from their ignorance of the gospel of the water and the Spirit, with what disposition of faith should they confess their sins to God? They have sin in their hearts because do not believe in the gospel of the water and the Spirit. People like them, who do not have the true Word of salvation in their hearts, try to wash away their daily sins by giving their prayers of repentance to God, but this is such a flawed faith. For all sinners, without faith in the gospel of the water and the Spirit, it is completely futile to confess their sins everyday, nor can they be washed from their sins by doing so. We must all realize this truth.

In the Old Testament's time, the people of Israel could not become whole through the sacrifices offered in the Tabernacle (Hebrews 10:1-3). But to fulfill His promise faithfully, Jesus took upon the sins of the world by being baptized by John the Baptist, shed His blood on the Cross, and has thereby saved His believers, turning them all sinless and perfect. So sinners cannot be washed from their sins merely through their prayers of confessions, unless they first have faith in the true gospel. But unfortunately, most Christians today are trying to wash away their sins by offering their modern equivalence of imperfect sacrifices, that is, their daily prayers of repentance. Today, those who profess to believe in Jesus without knowing the gospel Truth of the water and the Spirit mistakenly think that just because they believe in Jesus Christ, their sins are somehow washed away when they confess them to the Lord, but no sin is washed away by



just confessing it.

What I am trying to tell you is this: The belief that one can wash away his sins through his prayers of confessions without having faith in the gospel of the water and the Spirit is not the true faith, but it is no more than an empty faith. Yet despite this, many people, having misunderstood the message of 1 John 1:9 on confession, are still trying to received the remission of their sins through such prayers of repentance.

The Lord does not wash away your sins just because you confess them. It is only when you believe in the gospel Truth of the water and the Spirit that you can wash away even all your daily sins. This is because our Lord, by taking upon the sins of the world through His baptism and shedding His blood, has already washed them away. The washing of your sins is therefore possible only when you know this Word and believe in this Truth.

As such, unless you believe in the true Word of the water and the Spirit with your hearts, you cannot wash away all the sins that you are committing. As you now know, by placing your faith in only the blood of the Cross, all your sins cannot be cleansed away. You may think to yourselves that your sins were washed away by believing only in the blood, but in fact you cannot deny that all your sins still remain in your heart. This is beyond any doubt.

One may, then, wonder if the gospel of the water and the Spirit is a new gospel that has emerged only in this age. But this is not true. I will now show you through the Scriptures that the gospel of the water and the Spirit that I am preaching has existed ever since the Apostolic Age, and that this was the very gospel the Apostles believed in from the beginning.

First of all, the Apostle John received the remission of his sins by believing in the gospel of



the water and the Spirit and preached this same gospel (1 John 5:3-10). Second, the Apostle Peter also believed in the baptism that Jesus Christ received as the Truth of the remission of sin (1 Peter 3:21). Third, Paul also believed in the baptism of Jesus Christ and His blood as the remission of the washing of sin (Romans 6:2-5). There just is not enough time to list all the scriptural evidences from both the Old and New Testaments that prove this Truth, that Jesus has washed away our sins with the gospel of the water and the Spirit.

Do you now know and believe in the gospel power of the water and the Spirit? If you do believe in your hearts, you would then have now realized that all your sins were cleansed away once for all by the power of this true gospel. With the gospel of the water and the Spirit, the Lord has washed away even all your personal sins that you commit everyday. So you, too, must

believe in this gospel of the water and the Spirit with your hearts.

But what about those who still have sin in their hearts? How and with what kind of faith should they confess their sins? They should stop offering such groundless confession. They must confess their sins by placing their faith in the gospel of the water and the Spirit. They must first of all confess that they are sinners bound to continue to commit sin until the very day they die, and they must believe and admit that with the gospel of the water and the Spirit, the Lord has saved even such sinners like them.

Of course, we who believe in the gospel of the water and the Spirit should also confess our daily sins through our faith in the gospel of the water and the Spirit: If we do not confess our daily sins to God, we will end up drifting away from our fellowship with God.

This is why the righteous need to confess their



sins in even more detail, so that they may have a closer fellowship with the Lord. Such fellowship in the light of Truth will last forever as long as we are confessing our sins honestly in our faith in the Truth. But, if we neglect to confess our daily sins to the Lord, our fellowship with Him cannot last forever. Those who do not bother to acknowledge and confess their sins will gradually be cut off from God.

With what kind of faith, then, should we the righteous confess our sins? We must remember that our Lord, who is faithful and just (1 John 1:9), has already blotted out all our sins by accepting them through His baptism and was condemned on the Cross for these sins, and we must confess our sins by placing our faith in this Truth. By thus confessing our sins with our faith in the gospel of the water and the Spirit, we must escape from all darkness.

We, the born-again, must confess to God that

we are actually bound to sin until the day we die. And we must believe in the gospel of the water and the Spirit, and abide in the power of this gospel. The true confession of faith is more than sufficient to enable us to dwell in the faith that believes in the gospel power of the water and the Spirit, and to cleanse our hearts. This is how we have come to preach the gospel of the water and the Spirit to others as well, and how we have been enabled to run toward God in cleanness and with good conscience. This made us God's good soldiers who can call upon God, and win the spiritual battles by faith. It is because the righteous believe in the gospel of the water and the Spirit that they come to do the work of God, to praise this God who has blotted out all their sins, and to dwell and live in His light forever. Believe in this truth and take it to your hearts.

We who believe in the gospel of the water and the Spirit also sin everyday, for we are



insufficient in our flesh. How, then, should we confess these sins? Is it sufficient to confess in detail such as, “Lord, I have committed this sin and that sin”? No. The right confession for us the righteous is to admit our true nature to God—that is, to confess to God that we are bound to sin until the day we die—and abide in the faith that believes in the gospel Word of the water and the Spirit.

We can make the most proper confession to the Lord by admitting the nature of our weak flesh. Whether the righteous or sinners, when it comes to confessing one’s sins, all must confess that the fundamental nature of their flesh is such that they cannot avoid but sin, and they must acknowledge that they commit sin all the time not only with their flesh, but with their thoughts as well. In this way, they must confess properly to God. And then they must have the faith that always holds onto and believes in the gospel of

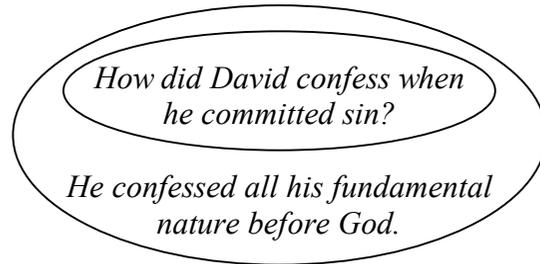
the water and the Spirit—that is, we must never forget that the Lord has blotted out our sins once for all through His baptism and bloodshed, and that He has shown us the true power of salvation.

Those who believe in the gospel of the water and the Spirit before the Lord come to realize just how effectively the power of this gospel of salvation is applied to the hearts of believers to wash away all their sins. It is by believing in the gospel power of the water and the Spirit with our hearts that we can wash away all the sins of our consciences, and it is because of this that we can come to thank the Lord. Moreover, because this faith in the true gospel has cleansed our consciences as well, it enables us to go to God in good conscience (1 Peter 3:21).

When we believe in the gospel of the water and the Spirit, our good consciences of faith lead us to praise the righteousness of God forever. It also enables us to dwell in the light, and to do



God's work forever in this light. Like this, faith in the gospel of the water and the Spirit is absolutely necessary for the righteous and sinners alike.



David's faith that reflects the proper confession of faith before God is revealed in Psalm 51:5-7:

*“Behold, I was brought forth in iniquity,  
And in sin my mother conceived me.  
Behold, You desire truth in the inward parts,  
And in the hidden part You will make me to  
know wisdom.*

*Purge me with hyssop, and I shall be clean;  
Wash me, and I shall be whiter than snow.”*

Because the Lord desires truth in our inward parts, David confessed to God, *“I was brought forth in iniquity, and in sin my mother conceived me.”* “Lord, this is who I really am. I am bound to sin until the day I die. Such is my fundamental nature.” David confessed to God, in other words, in this way. Through the sacrifice of the Day of Atonement offered in the Tabernacle, David had already been cleansed from all his sins by believing in the Savior to come, who would receive baptism and shed His blood for David's sins.

When David confessed his sins, he confessed his fundamental sinful nature to God and looked toward the Lord's mercy. He confessed to the Lord fundamentally that he could not avoid but sin, and that when he was made in the womb of his mother, it was in sin that he was made. His



confession admits, “Lord, I am a grave sinner from my birth. “Lord, because I am such a pile of sin, I slept with Bathsheba, and I murdered Your faithful soldier. I lied to my people and even to You. So I blasphemed You, and I broke all the Ten Commandments.” This is how he confessed. In other words, David confessed to the Lord that this was what his fundamental seed was.

When you and I confess our sins to God, we must confess by believing in the gospel of the water and the Spirit. And when we confess our sins, it is not enough to confess just our daily sins one by one; rather, we must confess that we are fundamentally the seeds of sin that cannot avoid but sin until the day we die. This is why we must believe in the gospel of the water and the Spirit. It is by believing that the Lord has delivered us from our sins through the gospel of the water and the Spirit that we can cleanse our hearts perfectly.

When we make proper confessions before God, and have concrete faith in the gospel of the water and the Spirit, we can thank Him for this salvation of grace and do God’s work consistently without being bound by our weaknesses. Only when you admit your fundamental weaknesses can you come to thank the Lord for this gospel of the remission of sin that He has given you. And only when you dwell in the Lord’s light by believing in the gospel of the water and the Spirit can you become the workers who spread the light of salvation to all those who still remain ignorant of this original gospel.

In Psalm 51, David prayed to God to restore this joy of salvation. And he prayed that God would enable him to preach the way of His righteousness to those who did not know this way. We, too, are just like David. We have also been saved from all our sins by believing in the



gospel of the water and the Spirit. Jesus has faithfully made us, who believe in this perfect gospel, righteous before God.

With the gospel Word of the water and the Spirit, the Lord has given us the salvation of the remission of sin that is more than sufficient to turn us into God's own children.

Our Lord fundamentally knew our weaknesses. Because we are basically creations and human beings, we sin all the time as we carry on with our lives. So we are prone to look at our own weaknesses, and we are always bound by our sins and weaknesses. All the while, we lament over ourselves, wondering how come we are so insufficient, and having no way to remedy such sinful weaknesses, we resigned ourselves to live in sin. But by trusting and believing in the gospel of the water and the Spirit that our Lord has given us, we can wash away all our sins. This is why He blotted out our sins once for all with

the gospel of the water and the Spirit.

Therefore, if someone has clearly received the remission of his sins from God by faith, and yet in spite of this he has little joy of receiving this salvation in his heart, then he is someone who has not confessed his sins to God by placing his trust in the gospel of the water and the Spirit. The proper confession that is based on correct faith strengthens our weak spirits.

Now we must realize what the true confession of faith is, and we must know the power of this proper confession. Our Lord has spoken to all of us about the power of the gospel of the water and the Spirit. When we confess to God like David, that we are fundamentally bound to sin until the day we die, Jesus then fills our hearts with His grace of the remission of sin that has washed away our sins through the gospel of the water and the Spirit. And this beautiful gospel stimulates us to preach this powerful gospel to



every sinner by refreshing our hearts. It makes us praise the Lord all the time. In short, the power of this gospel enables us not to be bound by our own weaknesses, to declare the righteousness of God to this world, and to have grateful hearts that gives thanks to God.

I thank God for restoring us by faith. Hallelujah! I give my thanks and praise to God, who has saved us from all our sins.

*What is it that God wants  
from all of us, the born-again?*

*It is for us not to be bound by our own  
weaknesses, but to vigorously work  
for God's gospel by faith.*

Once we receive the remission of our sins, God wants us not to be bound by our own weaknesses, but to do His work by trusting in the

gospel of the water and the Spirit. Even though we may have shortcomings, God wants us to have the right faith, to confess all our blemishes, to thank Him for saving such people like us, to praise the Lord, and to live our lives to spread the gospel of the water and the Spirit to all sinners. God desires His believers to preach the way of His righteousness, the gospel of the water and the Spirit even amid their weaknesses.

God wants us to free ourselves from our weaknesses by confessing our true nature to Him, and He is pleased when we offer the true sacrifice of praise by faith. My dear fellow believers, when it comes to confessing your sins, you must realize that to claim to God that you have not sinned is to make Him a liar. There is no one among us who has not sinned against God. Everyone sins. But even so, the gospel of the water and the Spirit can wash away all our sins completely.



As such, by placing our faith in the gospel of the water and the Spirit, we must move even closer to God and glorify Him. Though we believe in the gospel of the water and the Spirit, we must also admit that we are all too human, that we are bound to sin until the day we die. Now, we must admit our insufficiencies, and we must always confess our shortcomings and our faith in the God-given gospel of the water and the Spirit to Him. Only then can we be clothed in the power that frees us from all our sins by believing in the gospel of the water and the Spirit.

We must indeed be freed from all our sins that bind us in bondage by believing in this gospel power of the water and the Spirit. As Samson had cut off the ropes on his arms that had bound him (Judges 15:14), we, too must sever our weaknesses by believing in the gospel of the water and the Spirit. By our faith in this powerful

gospel, we must cut off all our weaknesses, stand up on our ground, and live the kind of life that glorifies God.

All of us are bound to sin until the day we die. But by confessing that we are indeed destined to sin to our last breath, by believing in the gospel of the water and the Spirit, and by abiding in this faith, we must exalt the righteousness of God. God has restored us as sinless spirits, and He has blessed us to become the kind of people who praise Him and spread the gospel to sinners. It was to clothe us in such blessings that He used the word “confession” here in today’s Scripture passage. Do you now realize what is true confession?

The Apostle John spoke to both the sinners and the righteous alike. Therefore, if there is any sinner sitting in God’s Church who does not know the gospel of the water and the Spirit, we must first preach this true gospel to him, so that



he would first believe in this beautiful gospel and receive the remission of sin into his heart. Only then can he first receive the remission of his sins by the power of the gospel and have true, heartfelt fellowship with the righteous.

## **How Do Sinners Confess?**

They are quite apt at praying to confess their daily sins, but they do not believe in the gospel power of the water and the Spirit. On the contrary, they keep telling themselves that they can somehow not sin anymore. But because they have not received the remission of their sins from their failure to believe in the gospel of the water and the Spirit, they are still under sin. So even as they profess to believe in Jesus, their lives of faith end up mired in contradictions, for there is sin in their hearts. In other words, though they

believe in Jesus, they are always insufficient, and as they are bound by such insufficiencies, they turn into hypocrites before both God and other people.

Some pastors say that they, too, have sin, and teach their congregations to confess their sins everyday. To them, ‘confession’ is simply a synonym for ‘prayer of repentance.’ They even give their prayers of repentance publicly in every meeting. But even if one were to make such confessions everyday, wouldn’t he still always lack faith? The reason for this is because unless one has faith in the gospel of the water and the Spirit given by the Lord, his sins cannot be washed away no matter how frankly he confesses them. Do you really believe that you can be washed from all your sins just by giving your prayers of confession? No one can receive the true washing of his sins unless he has faith in the gospel of the water and the Spirit.



In the Old Testament, the people of Israel gave sin offerings for their daily sins. But was there anyone who offered this kind of sacrifice perfectly? No, there was no one! In any given day, an Israelite would sin in the morning and give his sin offering; he would then sin again in the afternoon and offer another sacrifice; he would yet again sin in the evening and give yet another offering; and before going to bed, he would find himself sinning again, and once again, another offering would be required—there could be, in other words, no end to such offerings. So, the priests were always busy. But could you offer the sacrifice of the remission of sin perfectly? None of you would be able to achieve this. I am sure that even the most godly person could hardly offer 30% of his sin offerings to atone his sins.

Once, I heard a weird testimony from a pastor who founded a mission organization in Korea.

He testified how he had been born again like this: “When I was a leader of a Christian circle in my university, I was arranged to talk personally with the President Jeong-hee Park by a pastor who was acquainted with the President. While I was waiting for the pastor in front of his office to accompany him to the Presidential residence, I made up my mind to rebuke the President for his dictatorship. My heart was full of something like prophetic inspiration then. The secretary of the pastor said me that I had to wait for him for hours because he was praying now. Two hours had passed, and at last he came out. He then pointed me saying, ‘Brother Kim, don’t you have any sin then?’ I was struck speechless by his assertion for a while. It was like a thunderbolt from a blue sky. I fell down on the very spot, and started to confess all my sins while crying. All the sins I had committed flitted through my mind. I confessed, and confessed, and confessed



with crying. And when I rose up again after two hours of confession, I couldn't find any sin in my heart. I really was born again like this. Halleluiah!"

Can one receive the remission of sin just by confessing his sins honestly? No sinner can ever receive the remission of his sins even as he confesses all his sins in a row. Though God has faithfully and justly blotted out everyone's sins, the problem is that people do not believe in the gospel of the water and the Spirit as the gospel of Truth that has saved them from all their sins.

Sinners must first have a heart of David, and confess, "I was born in iniquity and conceived in sin. I am fundamentally a pile of sin. I am bound to sin until I die of old age. I am bound to hell. God, please save me." Only those who thus admit their true selves can receive the remission of their sins by accepting the gospel of the water and the blood. It is impossible for a sinner to

receive the remission of sin unless he admits himself as a grave sinner destined to hell.

We must believe in the Word that declares, "*The wages of sin is death, but the gift of God is eternal life in Christ Jesus our Lord*" (Romans 6:23). This passage means that if one has any sin at all, no matter how small, then death is inevitable for him. As such, we must acknowledge even our smallest sins before God. Moreover, we must also admit that even for such sins, we cannot avoid but be subjected to the condemnation of sin.

If we have admitted our fundamental selves to God, let us then now have fellowship in the gospel of the water and the Spirit. Though we had been fundamentally sinful, the Lord came to this earth to save us, and fulfilled all the righteousness of God when He was baptized by John the Baptist.

Our Lord accepted all our sins through His



baptism. And He carried them to the Cross. He shed his blood and died on the Cross to pay off all our sins. He rose from the dead again in three days, and now sits at the right hand of the throne of God. He has thus saved us perfectly. He has fulfilled all his righteousness through His baptism and bloodshed. Though we could not avoid but be bound to hell for our sins, by our faith in this salvation from sin that Jesus has given us, we have been delivered from all our sins.

Therefore, now, all that remains for us is the question of whether or not we believe that the Lord has indeed blotted out all our sins in this way. Put differently, the question is whether or not we believe that all our sins were passed onto Jesus through His baptism, and that there is therefore no longer any sin in our hearts. Now then, are you, who believe in the gospel of the water and the Spirit, righteous, or do you still

remain as sinners? You are now righteous.

The Bible tells us that God is “faithful and just.” He is so faithful and just that he has blotted out all our sins once for all with His baptism and bloodshed. By believing in this gospel of the water and the Spirit, we have received the remission of all our sins once for all. Now, with this faith must we, the righteous, confess our daily sins we commit everyday? The most important thing here is that we must confess our sins by placing our faith in the gospel of the water and the Spirit.

After receiving the remission of our sins, how should we confess? We must confess, “God, once again I committed such and such sins today,” and we must also believe in the gospel of the water and the Spirit.

We must confess like this: “Lord God, I am bound to commit such sins until the day I die. But You have blotted out all my sins by the



power of the gospel of the water and the Spirit.” It is then that we become of those whose hearts are always clean, thus thanking God and serving Him.

This is the right prayer of confession that the righteous give by faith. Such is the proper confession of those who believe in the gospel of the water and the Spirit. We must make this true confession not by just confessing only our sins that are revealed now, but by admitting that we are fundamentally such weak beings who cannot but sin until we die. We must then thank and praise God for blotting out all these sins by confirming our faith in the gospel of the water and the Spirit once again. Therefore, it is by believing in the gospel of the water and the Spirit that we can always praise God’s righteousness.

We must always live by our faith in the gospel of the water and the Spirit. By believing in this gospel Truth, we must confess our sins everyday.

By doing so, we must dwell in the righteousness of God, and abide in the brilliant light of Truth as well. Also, we must spread the light of salvation to all those who still remain in darkness. All of us must clearly believe in the fact that we are indeed abiding in the light, and by our faith in the righteousness of God, we must follow the Word of life and do His work.

This is the true confession of us the righteous. As we live on, we will sin again. But when we confess to God not only our very sins, but that we are the weak beings who cannot help but commit such sins until the day we die, and when we believe in the gospel of the water and the Spirit, we can then be freed from all our sins. We must have this kind of faith.

It is written in Hebrews 9:27-28, *“And as it is appointed for men to die once, but after this the judgment, so Christ was offered once to bear the sins of many. To those who eagerly wait for Him*



*He will appear a second time, apart from sin, for salvation.*” The Lord has made us clean. We are now apart from sin. Therefore, when we the righteous look toward our Lord, we can serve Him, become the workers of righteousness, dwell in God’s righteousness, and receive His blessings, all apart from sin.

So the confession that the righteous make is clearly different from that of sinners.

When we the righteous confess to God the sins that we have committed, we must confess by placing our faith in the gospel of the water and the Spirit. As well, placing our faith in this perfect gospel, we must admit that we cannot but sin in the future also. We can then all reach God’s holiness and come before God with good conscience, for we believe in the gospel of the water and the Spirit. By believing in this true gospel, our good conscience can answer toward God, and do His work. This is the blessing of

confession that God has bestowed on the righteous. Do you believe in the gospel of the water and the Spirit?

You must have confessed the sins that you committed before God. It is when we first recognize our insufficiencies that it is possible for us to confess our sins. Placing our faith in the gospel of the water and the Spirit, we must confess to the Lord that we are of such evil seeds. In this faith that believes in the baptism and blood of Jesus, you can be freed from your sins. Though you are insufficient, only by believing in the gospel that the Lord has given you, you can still be delivered from your sins and come to dwell in the righteousness of God. This is how the righteous can illuminate sinners with the light.

We must abide in the light of Truth by our faith in the gospel of the water and the Spirit. Those who do not know the gospel of the water



and the Spirit cannot properly understand and grasp the true meaning of this passage in 1 John 1:9 that speaks about confession, which says, “*If we confess our sins, He is faithful and just to forgive us our sins and to cleanse us from all unrighteousness.*”

Even the righteous actually continue to sin, and so their consciences can also become tarnished. What must we do, then, to be cleansed from all our filthiness and to get our faith approved by God? We must confess our sins to Him by placing our faith in the gospel of the water and the Spirit.

Could we possibly confess all our sins even if we tried? We all know very well that this is simply beyond our ability. But because we believe in the gospel of the water and the Spirit, the Lord has freed us from all our sins. Our Lord has cleansed us, who believe in this true gospel, from all unrighteousness. This gospel of the

water and the Spirit that the Lord has given us has enabled us to make the true confession.

I give all my thanks to God. Hallelujah! ☒



# CHAPTER 1

---

## SERMON 4

(1 John 1:8-10)

“Confession in Truth”



Contents



## Confession in Truth

< 1 John 1:8-10 >

**“If we say that we have no sin, we deceive ourselves, and the truth is not in us. If we confess our sins, He is faithful and just to forgive us our sins and to cleanse us from all unrighteousness. If we say that we have not sinned, we make Him a liar, and His word is not in us.”**

### The True Gospel Implied in Holy Communion

Not long ago, we had Holy Communion in our church, where we once again ruminated on the meaning of the bread and wine that we shared.

Along with the baptism of the believers, the sacrament of Holy Communion is one of two sacraments that our Lord commanded to us to keep. One thing that we must realize through Holy Communion is that He has blotted out all our sins through the baptism that He received on His body and the blood that He shed. When the Lord told us to “remember” the bread and wine in Holy Communion, He meant that we should believe and remember His baptism and bloodshed in our hearts.

When the Lord broke bread in the Last Supper, giving this bread and wine to His disciples, He told them, *“Take, eat; this is My body. . . . For this is My blood of the new covenant, which is shed for many for the remission of sins”* (Matthew 26:26-28).

The Lord has saved us from all our sins exactly according to what God had promised us. Through the sacrificial system in the Pentateuch,



God promised the Israelites that they could be forgiven from their sins when they offered sacrificial animals with the laying on of their hands on the animals, shedding the animals' blood, and burning the flesh of the sacrifices. And the Bible says that this sacrificial system is a shadow of the good things to come (Hebrews 10:1).

So according to this revelation, our Lord Jesus came to this earth, received baptism on His body, and shed His blood on the Cross. With the baptism that He received on His body and the crucifixion that remitted away all the wages of our sins, our Lord fulfilled all His promises.

It is because our Lord had accepted our sins through His baptism that He was crucified. He made sure to take upon our sins before He was crucified. So after being baptized, Jesus shed His blood and died on the Cross, rose from the dead again, and has thereby saved us. This is the very

fulfillment of the promise of salvation that God had made to all of us mankind.

Let us once again consider here what the Lord said to His disciples when He broke bread and gave it to them at the Last Supper: *“Take, eat; this is My body.”* By our faith in the gospel of the water and the Spirit, we must indeed take and eat this bread, which is the body of Jesus Christ. Jesus at once accepted all our sins, all the sins of everyone on this earth, onto His body by being baptized by John the Baptist. Therefore, whenever we eat the bread, we must eat it by believing that He has taken all our sins when He was baptized at the Jordan River.

And the wine Jesus shared with His disciples is likened to His bloodshed on the Cross. In other words, the bread and the wine of Holy Communion are the reminders of the gospel of the water and the Spirit. The Last Supper, wherein Jesus established Holy Communion, was



held on the Passover. Our Lord Jesus completed God's promised salvation implied in the Passover ritual. Therefore, the Bible declares, *"For indeed Christ, our Passover, was sacrificed for us" (1 Corinthians 5:7).*

After the Last Supper, Jesus went to a nearby mountain to pray, and there He was seized by the multitudes sent by the High Priest at that time. And He was crucified the next day. The last word He cried out on the Cross was, *"It is finished!" (John 19:30) "What shall we say then? Is there unrighteousness with God? Certainly not!" (Romans 9:14)* Jesus has fulfilled all righteousness with His baptism and bloodshed (Matthew 3:15).

For me and for all of us, our Lord bore the condemnation of our sins by being baptized and shedding His blood. This is why *"He was wounded for our transgressions, He was bruised for our iniquities" (Isaiah 53:5).* Though He in

fact had no sin at all, because He had come as our Savior, He accepted all our sins and died for us. Because Jesus took upon our sins through His baptism, He bore all His sufferings, was shunned by people throughout His 33 years of life, and He was also ignored and despised.

But we must eat and drink the bread and the wine of life by believing that He came to this earth, was baptized, and shed His blood, all in order to blot our sins once for all. This is the truly spiritual faith of those who participate in Holy Communion.

As such, when we take part in Holy Communion, we should not just think, "It's been a while since I last had bread and wine," but we must eat and drink by faith. In other words, I want you to participate in every Holy Communion with the faith that truly believes in the gospel of the water and the Spirit. I want all of us to realize the true meaning of Holy



Communion, and to eat and drink by faith.

So the next time we break bread in Holy Communion, let us accept this bread and eat it in remembrance of the salvation that the Lord has brought to us, that He has washed away all our sins by taking them upon His body through the baptism He received from John, and when we take the wine cup and drink from it, let us ruminated on the bloodshed of Jesus on the Cross. We will then have a good opportunity to really ruminated on His perfect salvation that He has completed through His baptism and bloodshed. And our Holy Communion would not end as only a formal ritual.

And whenever you accept the wine cup also, I ask that you ruminated on this faith in the gospel of the water and the Spirit. We could not avoid but be condemned to hell for our sins, and yet Jesus took upon all our sins and died for us. He bore all our condemnation, and has thereby saved

you from all your sins once for all.

“Our Lord has saved us with His baptism and Cross. The bread and wine, these two things are the gifts of salvation that the Lord has given us. This is how He has blotted out all our sins and made us God’s own people. I must believe in this, I must once again ruminated on this, the gospel of the water and the Spirit, and I must spread it throughout the whole world. I must preach it to all those who still do not know this Truth.” Let this be your faith whenever you approach Holy Communion.

Our God has not saved us from our sins only in empty words. Rather, just as He had promised our salvation to us with His Word, through the laying on of hands and bloodshed, our God has indeed saved us with the baptism that Jesus received and the blood that He shed in the New Testament’s time. This is how the Lord has blotted out all our sins. He gave us “*a new and*



*living way which He consecrated for us, through the veil, that is, His flesh” (Hebrews 10:20), and thus, we can be born again only by believing in this Truth. It is because, in other words, the Lord has washed away all our sins and saved us that we could receive our salvation by faith. Had our Lord not saved us from our sins, there would have no way for us to reach our salvation.*

How great His mercy is for us! We cannot but say the same praise that the Psalm writer gave to the Lord: *“What is man that You are mindful of him, And the son of man that You visit him?” (Psalm 8:4)* We are such lowly beings that we cannot avoid but sin throughout our lives only to end up in hell, and yet God has turned us, who are no more than mere creatures, into His own children, and He has loved us. How could all these things be anything but the grace of God?

From the very moment that God made this world, He wanted to make us His own children.

This is why He allowed us be born on this earth, why He gave us the gospel of the water and the Spirit, and why, by enabling us to know this gospel and to believe in it, He made it possible for us to be born again. Now, God has turned us, who believe in this gospel of the water and the Spirit, into His precious people, His own children, once and for all.

Our Lord has indeed given us eternal life and exalted our status over all the other creations. And He has clothed us in the splendor of living as God’s children. He has bestowed us with such amazing blessings. We give our thanks to this God. How could we ever realize the full extent of His unfathomable grace, that we should be able to give enough thanks and glory to God?

How could we ever boast before God? How could we overact before Him? How could we arrogantly say to Him, “I am a man of wisdom and intelligence”? How could we say anything



about the God-spoken Word and the guidance of the Church? How could we, even for a short while, consider the true gospel as something that is less than our own thoughts? To our God who has saved such lowly beings as us from all our sins, who has made us His children, and who has given us eternal life and allowed us to enjoy all splendor and glory, we have no choice but to give all our thanks by faith. Therefore, we must obey God by faith, follow the Lord by faith, and as we follow Him, we must accept the precious providence of God by faith.

This year's motto for The New Life Mission is: "Preaching the Gospel and Inspiring Spiritual Growth throughout the Whole World." We have many brothers and sisters throughout the world, who have received the remission of sin by believing in the gospel of the water and the Spirit through our ministries. They are the potential co-workers of our mission, and we must nourish

them and take care of them through emails, phone, and with our Christian literature. And we want to have them as our partners as well, to work together to spread the gospel, to pray together, and to fight against Satan together by faith. Our servants in Korea and our partners throughout the entire world must likewise work together by faith until the day our Lord returns. This is why we chose this year's motto like this, and it is my sincere desire that we can indeed live up to this motto. Until the day our Lord returns, we will continue to work under this motto.

Indeed, we will preach the gospel even more and further. Last year, as always, God had made us to serve the Lord more than expected. And I am sure that for this year also, He will continue to bring such abundant blessings to us to serve Him. It is my desire to spread the gospel throughout the whole world even more, to serve



the Lord and the gospel more, to bear more spiritual fruits of salvation, to give more glory to God, and to receive more blessings from God, in both body and spirit. I pray to God that He will make all this possible for us. I want our God to hold us steadfastly and to bless us all.

I truly want all of us to live by our faith in the gospel of the water and the Spirit until the day we meet our Lord face to face. Until this day, we must be faithful to His calling of world evangelism. Our Lord Jesus has already saved us through His baptism and blood. He took upon all our sins by being baptized and was condemned for us by shedding His blood and dying on the Cross. Therefore, until the very end, we will bear witness to the gospel Truth of the water and the Spirit. I want all of us to have stronger faith in God, to testify more, to bear more spiritual fruits, to receive more blessings, and to live for our Lord.

## **Since Most Christians Have Misunderstood and Misbelieved in This Truth Manifested in 1 John 1:8-10, We Must Learn the Real Truth All Over Again**

Through today's Scripture passage, I would like to let you know the Truth that the Apostle John wanted to explain repetitively and in detail. What he wanted to let us know is very complicated because there were many spiritual cases he had to handle. Therefore, I also cannot but consider this scripture lesson repetitively, because we should interpret the Word of God according to the Scripture writer's original intentions that were inspired by the Holy Spirit. This is why I ask you to read this sermon carefully with patience.

Right now, the Spirit of God dwells in the



hearts of those who believe in the gospel of the water and the Spirit. The Holy Spirit is the same hallowed God, who is no different from God the Father and Jesus Christ. Therefore, for those who believe in the gospel of the water and the Spirit, He is essentially the light of Truth. So this God, the Holy Spirit, bears witness to the Truth that He has saved us from all the sins of the world through the gospel Truth of the water and the Spirit.

Our Lord has delivered us from all our sins once for all through the gospel Truth of the water and the Spirit. The Apostle John thus tells us that we can have true fellowship only by faith, in the light of the real Truth of God. Now, we must remember here that we are the ones who have seen Jesus Christ with the eyes of our faith in the gospel of the water and the Spirit, touched Him, and heard Him with our ears of the same faith.

The Apostle John, as one of the spiritual

leaders, really wanted to share fellowship with the believers of his days. However, because such true fellowship could not be had between the born-again and sinners, he first wanted to classify Christians into distinct categories by posing this question: “Have you been delivered from all your sins by believing in the gospel of the water and the Spirit?”

## **The Apostle John Is Telling Us the Truth That We Must All Know**

*Why is the Apostle John using the word “if” here?*

*By doing so, he wanted to speak the Truth by applying it to two different kinds of people.*



We must first realize that it is by our faith in the gospel of the water and the Spirit, which is the love of God, that we have been washed from all our sins once for all. Our Lord is the Savior who has cleansed and perfectly saved us from all our sins with this true gospel, the love of God the Father.

Now, using the word “if”, the Apostle John declared, *“If we say that we have no sin, we deceive ourselves, and the truth is not in us”* (1 John 1:8). This passage means that “if we say that we have no sin, or that we have never sinned,” then we are of those who deceive themselves, and deceive God as well. If you neither know the gospel of the water and the Spirit nor believe in it, and yet you say that you have no sin, or that you have never sinned against God, then you are clearly lying to God. Such people, in other words, are unintentionally lying to God, for they still do not believe in the

gospel of the water and the Spirit before Him.

However, most Christians of this age do not believe in the gospel of the water and the Spirit, and therefore do not know the Truth that all their sins have already been blotted out by the righteous acts of Jesus Christ. They instead believe that their sins can be washed away just by confessing them. This is deeply disturbing and saddening. The Apostle John tells us that those who have such groundless faith are liars before God. This is the gist of the passage from 1 John 1:8-10.

That our Lord has blotted out all the sins of the entire mankind once for all through the love of salvation, that He was baptized and shed His blood in the Cross, is the everlasting truth for us. Therefore, all of us must realize that by knowing and believing in the gospel of the water and the Spirit, the gospel of the remission of sin manifested through the love of Jesus Christ, we

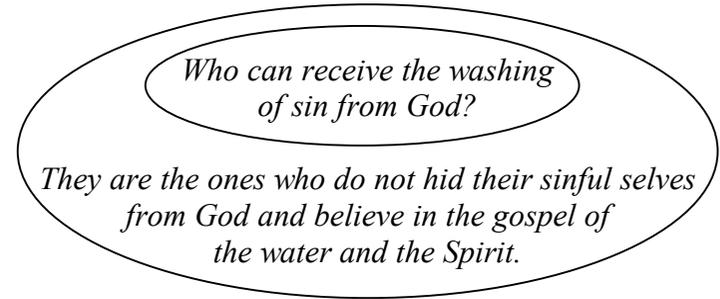


can indeed be saved from all our sins all at once.

Yet many people still do not know the gospel truth of the water and the Spirit, and as a result, they are living their lives in vain, with all their sins still remaining intact in their hearts, only to ultimately reach their own death in both body and spirit. Therefore, they must first confess that they indeed have sin, and that they are really in need of God's love of mercy, that is, the gospel of the water and the Spirit.

As such, everyone must first know this truth of the water and the Spirit. If any of you does not know the gospel of the water and the Spirit, and yet still says to God that he has not sinned, then he is absolutely a liar. Such people must accept the gospel of the water and the Spirit into their hearts as soon as possible. All those who have sin before God must confess that they are bound to sin until the day they die, and they must accept into their hearts the salvation of the gospel of the

water and the Spirit, God's love of mercy, and believe in it. They must realize that they truly cannot be saved from all their sins if they do not believe in the love of salvation revealed in the God-given gospel of the water and the Spirit. Therefore, all those who have sin before God must admit that they are sinners, and they must believe in the gospel of the water and the Spirit, the gospel that can deliver them from all their sins.



We must all know and believe in the love of truth, that Jesus Christ the Son of God came to



this earth in the image of man and has saved each and every one of us from all our sins through the gospel love of the water and the Spirit. All those who know the reason why Jesus was baptized by John and crucified, and believe in this, can be saved from all their sins once for all by this faith. We must all realize that by believing in the gospel truth of the water and the Spirit, we can receive, by this faith, the perfect love of salvation from God. As such, those who believe in this love of God bestowed through the gospel of the water and the Spirit can be saved from all their sins by faith.

However, to believe in God's love of salvation, they must first honestly admit to God that they have sin, and that they are forever bound to hell for their sins: "I have sin before God. I am someone who, born as a descendant of Adam, inherited sin." Only those who admit that they are sinners, acknowledge that the Law of

God is strict, and surrender to Him can be delivered from all their sins by His grace that is bestowed to the believers in the gospel of the water and the Spirit. It is only to those who admit themselves as grave sinners destined to hell that God has given the opportunity to be delivered from sin by this faith in the gospel Word of the water and the Spirit.

So this opportunity to receive the remission of sin is given only when one knows that he is a sinful being, and that the judgment of sin awaits him. Every sinner must confess, "God, I am a sinner, someone who is bound to hell." This is what 1 John 1:8 declares to every sinner.



## What Is the Meaning of 1 John 1:9?

*What dose this verse mean if we were to apply it to sinners?*

*It is telling them that they must first be washed of all their sins by believing in the gospel of the water and the Spirit.*

1 John 1:9 says, *“If we confess our sins, He is faithful and just to forgive us our sins and to cleanse us from all unrighteousness.”* When we apply this passage to sinners, its meaning is revealed as the following: If we actually confess the sinful nature of our souls, the Lord will wash away all our sins with the gospel truth of the water and the Spirit.

The Apostle John said in 1 John 4, “God is love.” In other words, God is essentially the Lord

of love and truth, and, through His love, He has saved all sinners once for all from all their sins. John also said, *“In the beginning was the Word, and the Word was with God, and the Word was God” (John 1:1)*. It is also written, *“The Word became flesh and dwelt among us” (John 1:14)*. These passages are telling us, in short, that God became flesh and came as man, was baptized, shed His blood, and has thereby saved mankind from all their sins. This remission of sin is the very substance of the love of God. By believing in this love of God that came as the gospel of the water and the Spirit, all human beings can be saved from all their sins. This love of God is the real love of truth (2 Thessalonians 2:10).

In Romans 5:19, it is written that by one man's disobedience many were made sinners. This passage means that because all human beings, regardless of their own intentions, are born with their sins from their very birth in this world, this



makes them fundamental sinners who cannot but sin at all times throughout their entire lives. In short, no one can say, “I am sinless,” unless he was cleansed of all his sins by believing in the powerful gospel of the water and the Spirit.

However, there are people who dare to say, “I am sinless,” even though they do not have faith in the true gospel. For those who, in spite of this, still claim to be sinless without having faith in the gospel of the water and the Spirit, the Lord is telling us that God’s love of truth cannot enter into their hearts. If you say to God that you have no sin even as there actually is sin in your hearts, how could the love of God possibly enter into such hearts?

The Bible tells us that God’s love of truth cannot enter into the hearts of those who have no knowledge of the gospel truth of the water and the Spirit and yet still say to God that they have no sin. His merciful love is only given to the

hearts of those sinners who admit to God that they have sin, by allowing the gospel of the water and the Spirit, the truth of the remission of sin, to them. Here, we must pay careful attention to the word “if” that the Apostle John used.

Our Lord brings the salvation of the true remission of sin only to those sinners who confess to Him frankly that they are sinners. For God is faithful to all, and He is just, He has come to us on this earth by the gospel of the water and the Spirit to wash away all our sins. So God said that to those who have sin before Him, and to all those who do not deceive their hearts but make true confession, He will give the blessings of salvation that wash them away from all unrighteousness.

Therefore, every sinner, who still does not know the gospel of the water and the Spirit, should pray as the following: “God, I have committed these sins against You. And because



of the sin that I inherited from my ancestors Adam and Eve, I cannot help but continue to sin as I live my life. God, I admit to you that I have no other choice but to be bound to hell according to Your Law. Please save this hell-bound sinner from all my sins!”

To those who thus confess to God and ask for His merciful salvation, He will give the salvation of truth that He has prepared for them. To save all sinners from all their sins, God became a man for a short while. He is Jesus Christ. He has accomplished God’s righteousness by being baptized by John, and by bearing all the condemnation of sin by carrying the sins of the world to the Cross and shedding His precious blood. Jesus has indeed saved all mankind from all their sins. The Lord has given His perfect salvation to whoever believes in this truth. Because the gift of salvation that God has given to mankind is the truth that has come as the

gospel Word of the water and the Spirit, by believing in this truth, every sinner must receive the remission of sin from God and give his praise to Him.

### **Therefore, All of Us Must Confess Our Sins and Be Saved from All Our Sins by Our Faith in the Gospel of the Water and the Spirit**

*How exactly has the passage that describes God as “faithful and just” been realized in our hearts?*

*It has been realized as the gospel Truth of the water and the Spirit that washes away our sins.*



1 John 1:9 states, *“If we confess our sins, He is faithful and just to forgive us our sins and to cleanse us from all unrighteousness.”* Here, the phrase “faithful and just” speaks the truth that our Lord not only took upon all our sins of this world once for all by being baptized by John the Baptist, but by also being condemned vicariously on the Cross for all our sins at once, He has faithfully fulfilled His promise for all who believe in Him. In short, our Lord fulfilled all the righteousness of God all at once through the gospel of the water and the Spirit.

That God is “faithful” means that He is truthful, and is not false but real. It means that God is saying, “My love that has saved you from all your sins is truthful; it is never false. I have delivered all of you thoroughly as I promised you through the Old Testament. I sent My Son Jesus Christ as your Savior, and made Him receive baptism from John to take upon all your sins.

And He was condemned for all your sins by shedding His blood to complete My promise of salvation without fail.”

When sinners confess to God that they are sinners, accept His love, and recognize the gospel Truth of the water and the Spirit, then they can be saved from all their sins. The Bible says, *“For the wages of sin is death, but the gift of God is eternal life in Christ Jesus our Lord”* (Romans 6:23). Whoever receives God’s gift with a believing heart come to have eternal life, but whoever rejects this gift, the gospel of the water and the Spirit, will be sent to hell for eternal condemnation.

*“In this the love of God was manifested toward us, that God has sent His only begotten Son into the world, that we might live through Him”* (1 John 4:9). God’s love was manifested through His Son’s righteous act, which is constituted by the baptism that Jesus Christ



received from John the Baptist and the truth of His bloodshed on the Cross.

## To Whom Does 1 John 1:8-10 Apply Then?

*To whom is the passage from  
1 John 1:8-10 spoken?*

*It is the truth spoken to two kinds of people:  
Those who believe in the gospel  
of the water and the Spirit,  
and those who do not.*

Is this passage, then, also spoken to those who have received the remission of sin? Or is it only spoken to those who have not received the remission of sin yet? It is what God spoke to both of these two kinds of people; to those who

have received the remission of sin and those who are yet to receive it.

1 John 1:9 says, *“If we confess our sins, He is faithful and just to forgive us our sins and to cleanse us from all unrighteousness.”* Let us, then, first apply this passage to those who have received the remission of their sins by believing in the gospel of the water and the Spirit. The born-again, who have received the remission of sin, should confess their sins on the basis of their faith in the gospel of the water and the Spirit. They must, in other words, confess their sins by believing that Jesus has already washed away all these sins with His baptism and His bloodshed on the Cross.

Unfortunately, many Christians today believe in the erroneous doctrine of prayers of repentance. They believe that if they confess their sins everyday and ask God to wash them from these sins with Jesus’ blood, God would



wash away such sins whenever they pray. If people, not knowing the gospel of the water and the Spirit even as they believe in Jesus as their Savior, were to confess their sins and ask Him everyday to wash them away, what would Jesus then have do again, and how would He have do this? Jesus would then have to come again to this world all over again, take upon the sins of the world again by being baptized by John the Baptist, be crucified to death once more, and rise from the dead yet one more time.

They are so-called Christian sinners who are crucifying Jesus everyday. You need to realize here that if you try to be washed from your sins just by believing in the blood of the Cross, even as you in fact neither know nor believe in the gospel of the water and the Spirit, you will only end up falling into the trap of a worldly religion, where it will be difficult for you to turn around. To wash away all the sins that you commit, must

Jesus really be baptized again by John the Baptist and shed His blood all over again? It is because you have misunderstood Jesus and misbelieved in Him that to this very day, you have kept all your sins intact in your hearts.

But if you believe in the gospel of the water and the Spirit, you can completely blot out all your sins from your hearts once and for all. Why? Because Jesus forever took upon the sins of the world by being baptized by John, as the Bible tells us, "*Now where there is remission of these, there is no longer an offering for sin*" (*Hebrews 10:18*). Therefore, those among us who are trying to wash their sins through the prayers of repentance everyday while carrying their sins in their hearts are actually committing grave sins against God everyday. And they are also the ones who still do not believe in the gospel of the water and the Spirit.

However, those who do not know the gospel



of the water and the Spirit are distorting today's passage. This is the reality of today's Christianity. They think that their faith lies in something similar to the gospel of the water and the Spirit, but it is entirely different in substance. The religionists that are now found in Christian communities only know and believe in half the Truth, for they do not have the proper knowledge of the gospel of the water and the Spirit. Yet because they do not clearly know the gospel of the water and the Spirit, and because they have more trust in Christian doctrines than in God's gospel Word of the water and the Spirit, they are living their lives oblivious to their own spiritual nakedness.

This is why they are living before God with fallacious faith. This is why there are so many Christians in this world who do not know the gospel of the water and the Spirit. And this is why I am making it clear here that it is because

people do not really know the gospel truth of the water and the Spirit that they have sin in their hearts even as they believe in Jesus Christ.

The fact that I am pointing out that some of you have only half faith can be proven with the gospel of the water and the Spirit. I have every confidence to tell you that if anyone, in his own thoughts, does not believe in the truth held in the gospel of the water and the Spirit, the gospel of God's truth, he will turn into a liar before God and face His fearful condemnation of sin. This is why I am trying to reinterpret and explain 1 John 1 to you.

The faith that holds only the blood of Jesus on the Cross as salvation is a gospel of untruth that has veered far away from the holy gospel truth of the water and the Spirit. This faith that believes only in Christian doctrines clearly emphasizes only the blood of the Cross, not the gospel of the water and the Spirit, and as such, from the



perspective of the real truth, it is flawed.

Through my sermon series, I had already told many Christians throughout the entire world clearly that the Lord has washed away all their sins with the gospel of the water and the Spirit. However, many people in this world still do not know the gospel truth of the water and the Spirit. They think instead that they can somehow wash away their sins everyday and become closer to God only with their prayers of repentance. Such faith is extremely flawed. As such, among today's Christians, there are many who still do not believe in the gospel of the water and the Spirit, and as a result, are actually standing outside the truth of salvation.

I John 1:9 clearly indicates that God has already cleansed away even our personal sins that we commit everyday, and that we can keep our hearts sinless by confessing our daily sins on the basis of our faith in the gospel of the water

and the Spirit. Yet even to this very day many people still do not know the gospel of the water and the Spirit and do not believe in it, and as a result, they are entering into their own destruction because of their sins—I can only pity them. Such people fallaciously believe that while they are living in this world and until they die, they can wash away their sins with their prayers of repentance like this: “God, please forgive me. Yet again, I have done wrong today. I sinned from this morning until right before this worship service. Please forgive me.”

When they give such prayers of repentance, they believe that all their sins were washed away when they prayed, but in fact, their sins still remain intact in their hearts. And, as I said before, such people are unfaithful before God, and are committing grave sins against Him. They are the ones who obstinately reject the unconditional love of God that He bestowed on



us through His Son's perfect sacrifice.

## **To Say That We Have Not Sinned against God Is to Show Just How Ignorant We Are of Ourselves**

*Is there anyone in this world  
who has not sinned?*

*There can be no such one. Everyone is  
a grave sinner who has sinned  
against God.*

1 John 1:10 says, *“If we say that we have not sinned, we make Him a liar, and His word is not in us.”* Among today's evangelicals, there are those who claim that they do not commit sin, but this is a pure nonsense. The sins that people

commit not only refer to the wrongdoings that they commit with their acts, but they also refer to the evil thoughts that are sprouted in their minds because of their sinful nature. Have you not been angry at someone for being late? Do you not shout all kind of abuses at someone cuts in front of your car? Is there anything special about human beings who, after all, have the flesh? So for anyone to claim to God that he has not sinned is making God a liar. This is what 1 John 1:10 says.

It is because everyone sins against God until the day he dies that Jesus at once bore all the sins of the people of this world by being baptized, carried these sins of the world to the Cross, and shed His blood on it to pay off their wages at once. This is the perfect love of God that He has for us, and the Truth of salvation that has completely saved us with the gospel of the water and the Spirit. God's love, in other words, was



manifested as the baptism that Jesus received from John, His bloodshed on the Cross, and His resurrection. And this was the only proper way for Him to fulfill all the righteousness of God (Matthew 3:15).

Knowing fully well just how weak we human beings are, and just how we cannot help but commit countless sins in this world, our Lord, before being crucified, first took upon all the worldly sins of everyone by being baptized by John the Baptist, carried these sins of the world to the Cross, shed His blood, washed away the sins of those of us who believe, and bore our condemnation of sin once for all. Because we were born with all the ingredients of sin from our very birth into this world, there is no way for us not to sin while we are living in this world. This is why God is telling us to confess our sins and to believe in the gospel of the water and the Spirit. Our Lord will then make us whole again with the

gospel truth of the water and the Spirit, the truth that has washed away our sins, the truth that has cleansed us from all our sins and unrighteousness.

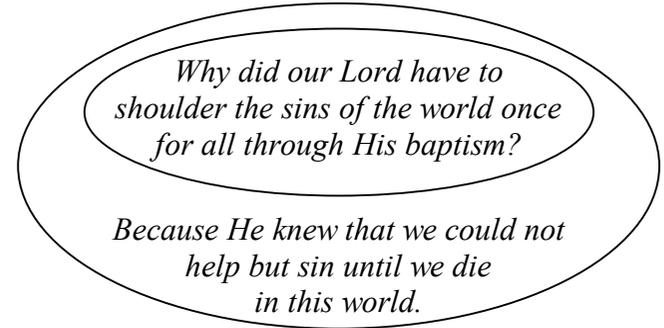
We must now confess our sins by placing our faith in the gospel of the water and the Spirit, saying, “God, I have failed to live according to Your Law, and I have sinned against You.” When we thus confess our sins, the love of God will let us realize that Jesus took upon the sins of the world through the baptism He received from John in the Jordan River, carried these sins to the Cross, shed His blood for us, and that He has already atoned all our sins, including these sins, thus telling us that we are now sinless.

In short, the righteous should also confess their sins before God, but they must do so within their faith in the gospel of the water and the Spirit, which gives them great confidence in the remission of even their personal sins. It was to



give us the blessings of salvation, of the remission of even our daily sins, that our Lord was baptized by John, died on the Cross, and rose from the dead again. By thus accepting all the sins of this world once for all through His baptism, as well as by carrying these sins and shedding His blood, our Lord has fulfilled the remission of sin, which has become all the righteousness of God, to those who believe in this. The gospel of the water and the Spirit in which we believe is the Truth of God and the love of salvation.

## **Do You Believe in the Truth That Is Manifested in This Prayer of Confession?**



1 John 1 speaks the gospel truth of the water and the Spirit, the crystallization of the love of God, to two kinds of people simultaneously. However, even as we speak now, Christians throughout the whole world, because they have failed to reach the correct interpretation of these three verses from 1 John 1:8-10, have fallen into



confusion and are entering into their own destruction, the eternal punishment of hell. 1 John 1:8 says, *“If we say that we have no sin, we deceive ourselves, and the truth is not in us.”* Seeing this passage, some people have misconstrued its meaning, and thinking that it is only natural for them to have sin even as they believe in Jesus, they have volunteered themselves to remain as sinners. But it is wrong to misunderstand and misbelieve like this.

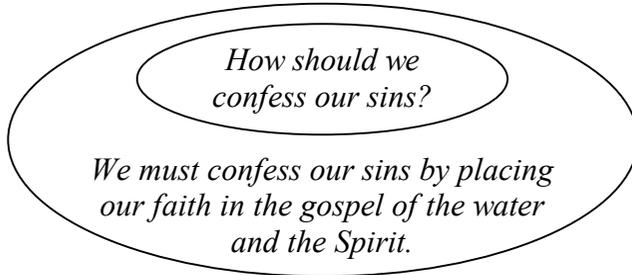
Is it right for anyone to still have sin in his heart even after believing in the gospel of the water and the Spirit? No, this isn't right! Anyone who claims to know the gospel of the water and the Spirit, and yet at the same time says that his heart still has sin, is not someone who really believes in the Truth of salvation. But those who believe that the gospel truth of the water and the Spirit has completely remitted away all their sins are the ones whose sins have indeed been washed

away. As such, 1 John 1 is applicable to two kinds of people.

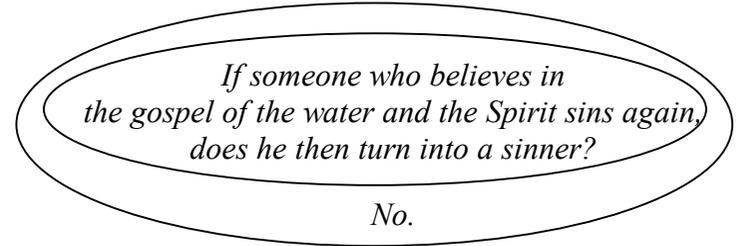
The Apostle John used the word “if” here because there were many who came into God's Church and pretended to be righteous even as they did not know the gospel of the water and the Spirit yet, nor received the remission of their sins. And he really wanted them to receive the remission of sin by believing in the gospel truth of the water and the Spirit. This was also his earnest desire for all the people of the whole world.



## Let Us Now Examine 1 John 8-10 in More Detail



This passage teaches us how those of us who believe in the gospel of the water and the Spirit should confess our sins to God when we commit transgressions, and that by doing so, we can be freed from the darkness that arose from our transgressions.



Considering today's Scripture passage, particularly the part that says, "If we say that we have no sin, we deceive ourselves, and the truth is not in us," we are once again puzzled. The first question, then, is whether or not it is possible for those who believe in the gospel of the water and the Spirit to once again have sin in their hearts. It is crystal-clear that those who know Jesus Christ properly and believe in the gospel of the water and the Spirit have, as a matter of fact, no sin in their hearts. This is because our Lord, by the gospel power of the water and the Spirit, has washed away everyone's sins once for all and bore all the

condemnation of sin.

The Bible tells us that through the gospel of the water and the Spirit, God has delivered from all sins those who believe in this light of truth and follow it. Here, then, let us return to the question that was just raised: When these people who have received the remission of their sins by believing in the gospel of the water and the Spirit sin once again, do they revert back to being sinners? This can never happen. Those who believe in the gospel of the water and the Spirit are always sinless, at all times.

When we apply this passage to the people who are yet to believe in the gospel of the water and the Spirit, this passage becomes the touchstone of their spiritual status. Before this passage, they cannot but confess to God that they are sinners who are doomed to go to hell. And God will then show His mercy for them through the gospel of the water and the Spirit. Therefore, we can

interpret 1 John 1:8 as a passage in which God calls sinners to repent to receive the remission of all their sins by believing in the true gospel.

But, as I wrote before, some evangelicals claim with their lips that they have no sin even though they are ignorant of the gospel of the water and the Spirit. Such people are deceiving themselves because the truth is not in them. They can never receive the remission of their sins because of their falsehood. This passage actually tells the Christian sinners that to abide in the light of Truth, they must first receive the remission of sin by believing in the gospel of the water and the Spirit.

Therefore, the passage from 1 John 1:8, which states, “If we say that we have no sin, we deceive ourselves, and the truth is not in us,” does not mean that those who believe in the gospel power of the water and the Spirit would once again become sinners if they sin again. Those who



believe in the gospel of the water and the Spirit have no sin. What we need to know is that if someone who believes in the gospel of the water and the Spirit sins, he should first admit his wrongdoing and realize that this sin is not in his heart, but it was already blotted out by the gospel power of the water and the Spirit. Only then can they be freed from all their insufficiencies by their faith in the gospel of the water and the Spirit.

This is the truth that our Lord is making all of us realize through 1 John 1:8-10. Therefore, when we sin against God, we must confess such sins in detail, and we must trust in the gospel of the water and the Spirit. The Lord is telling us that such confession of faith is the right prayer of confession. The Apostle John is telling us here not to dwell in our personal sins that are committed continuously, but to be freed from the reign of darkness by placing our faith in the

gospel of the water and the Spirit.

There can never be any instances when those of us who believe in the gospel of the water and the Spirit would once again turn into sinners for committing another sin against God. Those who have once believed in the gospel of the water and the Spirit are, by this faith, always and forever sinless. From now on, we who believe in this gospel of the water and the Spirit must realize that we have already become God's children, for we have become clearly sinless by faith.

The Apostle John is telling all of us to confess our sins, and he wants to share his faith with all of us so that we may abide and live in God's light of truth and have true fellowship with God.

How, then, did he believe in God? What kind of faith did he have? His faith was clearly different from the faith of today's Christians. How was it different? Today's Christians believe only in the blood of Jesus shed on the Cross, but



John believed in Jesus who had come by the water, the blood, and the Spirit (1 John 5:4-8). He, in other words, believed in the gospel of the water and the Spirit as we the born-again do.

So how is it then? Was not his faith different from that of today's Christians? It was clearly distinct. The results of believing in Jesus Christ, therefore, were also different. Because the faith of the Apostle John was such a perfect one, and his heart remained sinless under all circumstances, he was not afraid of God (1 John 4:18).

But in contrast, how are today's Christians? When today's Christians sin, do they not have sin in their hearts? They clearly have it. And instead of not fearing God, they indeed fear Him.

We have now received the remission of our sins by having the same faith that the Apostle John had. But even after having thus received the everlasting remission of sin, we still continue to

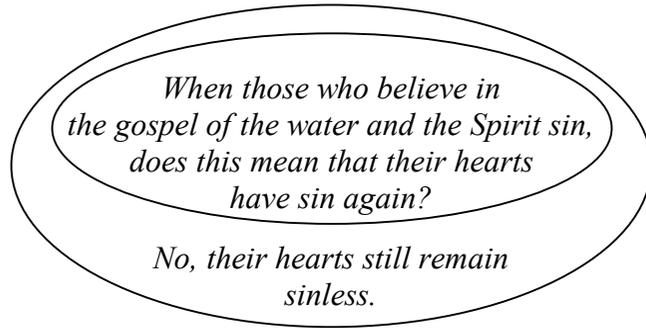
sin, for our flesh is weak. This is why we must ruminate on this truth of the gospel of the water and the Spirit whenever we sin. This is why we, though sinless, are freed from darkness by confessing our daily sins.

Were we not to continue to sin, we would not need to give any more prayers of confession. Therefore, those who do not confess their insufficiencies to God are those who love their own darkness. For those who believe in the gospel of the water and the Spirit, the power of their prayers of confession is manifested as the truth that enables them to live in the light of God. Such prayers of confession given by the righteous manifest the gospel power of the water and the Spirit even more forcefully. Yet even so, many people still remain ignorant of this gospel truth of the water and the Spirit, and as a result, they remain in darkness with all their sins intact in their hearts. These people must indeed come to



know the gospel of the water and the Spirit.

Giving prayers of confession without the gospel of the water and the Spirit has no effect whatsoever. For those who give their prayers of confession even as their hearts still remain sinful, there can be no real effects of their prayers, unless they first believe in the gospel of the water and the Spirit.



All the Word of the Bible is the map of salvation to the love of truth. If we were to read only the one verse from 1 John 1:8, which states,

*“If we say that we have no sin, we deceive ourselves,”* we may indeed think that it is right for even Christians to always have sin. But what the Lord is telling us is that it is not only by the blood of the Cross that our sins are blotted out. For all of us, it is by believing in the gospel Word of the water and the Spirit, the manifestation of God’s love, that all our sins are blotted out by the power of this gospel. Even if we sin, because the Lord has already blotted out all our sins, those of us who believe remain sinless. So you must first realize and believe that the Lord has made you sinless.

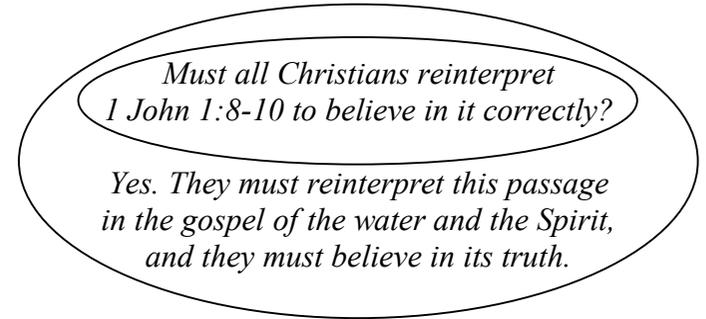
We then need to consider here just how we should understand and explain today’s Scripture passage. The passage from 1 John 1:8-10 can be explained only in the faith that believes in the gospel of the water and the Spirit. Our Lord gave us the gospel Word of the water and the Spirit so that we would always live in His bright light of



truth by faith; this is why He gave us this Word of truth. What today's passage is telling us is that although we have become the children of light by believing in the gospel of the water and the Spirit, it is still possible for us to dwell in darkness and to sin, and therefore we should find the true light by making proper confession to God in faith.

Those who believe in the Word of Truth admit that they cannot but sin until they die. Therefore, we the righteous cannot say to God today that we have not sinned in our lives. What today's Scripture passage is telling us is to not only confess to God our sins, but also to confess that we are fundamentally sinners, and to return to the God of truth by placing our faith in the gospel of the water and the Spirit. We ought to abide in the light by admitting our wrongdoings frankly before God and restore the light by confirming again in the light of the true gospel, for sin is sin

before God.



We need to correctly interpret 1 John 1:8, where it says, “If we say that we have no sin,” for verse 8 continues to say that if this is the case, then “the truth is not in us.” Here, ‘the truth’ is the gospel of the water and the Spirit, and it means that the God of love has remitted away all our sins by the power of the gospel truth of the water and the Spirit.

If the born-again do not regard sin as sin after they commit it, they are lying in hypocrisy,



having their own consciences seared with a hot iron. If the believers in the gospel of the water and the Spirit commit sin, they must confess to God properly to abide in the beautiful gospel, like the following: “God, I have sinned against You by committing such and such transgressions.” Whenever we sin, we must admit this fact to God as it is. We can then be freed from all our sins, for our Almighty Lord will bear witness to us with His Word that He has already cleansed away all our sins by the power of the gospel of the water and the Spirit that He has given us.

It is because the God-given true Word of the water and the Spirit always dwells in our hearts that we can make the proper confession. We must remember that through this true Word of the water and the Spirit, God has cleansed us from all evil. With this true gospel, our Lord has at once blotted out all the sins that we humans

commit throughout our entire lifetime. The confession that is made by placing our faith in this Word is the right confession.

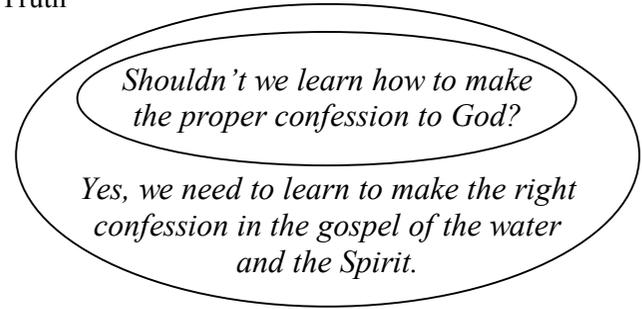
The confession that the Apostle John is speaking about in 1 John, in other words, does not just refer to the prayers of repentance that those who have sin in their hearts make. What we must realize here is that there are fundamental differences between the confession of daily sins made by the believers in the gospel of the water and the Spirit and the prayers of repentance made by those who are ignorant of the gospel power of the water and the Spirit confessing. These two are distinct from each other.

Anyone who has sin in his heart, regardless of whether he believes in Jesus as his Savior, is still living under the wrath of God. The Bible says that the wages of sin is death, and that no sin is blotted out without paying off its wages with life:



*“Without shedding of blood there is no remission” (Hebrews 9:22).* Therefore, even if he cries over his daily sins and constantly gives his prayers of repentance, these sins simply do not disappear. He has no other choice but to continue to live in uncertainty.

In contrast, those who abide in the gospel Truth of the water and the Spirit continue to dwell in the light of truth by confessing all the sins committed in their everyday life, and by placing their faith in the gospel of the water and the Spirit. As such, everyone must be freed from all his sins by believing in this powerful gospel. Christians must therefore dwell in the bright gospel truth of the water and the Spirit by faith. For all of us, if we commit evil deeds against God or our fellow human beings, we must confess them as they are and resolve them by our faith in the true gospel before moving on.



There are various kinds of sin that we humans commit against God. First, the greatest evil of all evil deeds that sinners commit against God is the sin of not believing in the gospel of the water and the Spirit even as one knows it. This sin is the very sin of the blasphemy against the Holy Spirit. Anyone who has learned about the gospel Word of the water and the Spirit and understands it must believe in it, for if he fails to do, he will never be remitted from his sins by God, ever. Another mortal sin that sinners commit unintentionally is the sin of misunderstanding the gospel of the water and the Spirit and standing

against it. These are the two mortal sins that those who are not yet born again commit. They will be driven to hell unless they repent from their evil way. It is therefore most urgently required for them to turn around from their evil way, and to believe in the true gospel of the water and the Spirit.

And to say that one believes in the gospel of the water and the Spirit but does not work to spread it is also a greatly wicked sin. And, if we had, before God's Church, prevented the gospel of the water and the Spirit from being preached, then we had committed a great sin against God. These are the gravest sins that the born-again could commit before God. We must confess this sin as our wrongdoing as well. This is the right attitude that the saints should have when confessing their sins. We, the saints and servants of God, must know how to make such proper confession.

We must all realize what the passage from 1 John 1:8-10 is trying to tell us, and we must believe in its message. If we do not recognize our sins and do not know how to make the right confession, the truth of God's gospel of salvation will not be found in our hearts. What I want to reiterate here is that "God is light." By realizing that God is indeed the light itself, and by also believing that God is love, we need to make the right confession that recognizes all the acts of darkness that we had committed as sins.

What we must all realize here is that because God has blotted out all our sins with the light and love of Jesus, and because we have been remitted from all our sins by believing in this, we have all the more reason to know how to make the right confession. We need to admit that in our flesh, we are of those who often cannot but walk in darkness as we live on this earth, and we need to know how to make the right confession by



believing in the gospel of the water and the Spirit. Only then can we become truly mature Christians.

Knowing fully well that we cannot help but live amidst the darkness of the flesh from time to time while we are living in this world, our Lord gave us the gospel Word of the water and the Spirit. God has enabled all of us to look toward the Lord with our eyes of faith, in the gospel of the water and the Spirit, and to live in the light of truth. Our Lord has blotted out all our sins with His powerful gospel. Therefore, we can indeed be washed away from all the sins that we commit in our lives, but to achieve this, we must first make the right confession to God and believe in Him.

It is by our faith in the gospel of the water and the Spirit given by the Lord that we have been clothed in the grace of the remission of our sins, once for all and forever. The Lord wants us to

forever wash away all our personal sins by placing our faith in the gospel of the water and the Spirit. As we carry on with our lives in this world before God, we must believe in the gospel of the water and the Spirit given by our Lord, our hearts must be conscious of the fact that He has blotted out all our sins, and we must make the right confession by this faith. Our Lord who has become our light has enabled us to follow Him, if indeed all of us do ruminate on the gospel Word of the water and the Spirit that He has given us, and affirm the remission of our sins in our hearts.

Doing what we are not supposed to do before God is what constitutes sin before Him. For all of us, whenever we wrong each other or God, it is only when we admit our wrongdoings to God and each other that we can make the right confession. To do so, in other words, we must admit that we cannot help but sin until we die.



The confession of today's Scripture passage does not refer to the prayers of repentance, in which one admit just his daily committed sins. True confession of the saints is for us to admit our fundamental nature, as well as the very sins we have committed, within our faith in the gospel of the water and the Spirit that has cleansed all the sins of our entire lifetime once and for all.

Therefore, to just confess our sins without having any faith in the salvation of the water and the Spirit is neither the confession that God desires from us, nor the right confession; as such, we must not only confess to God the sins that we have committed, but through our faith in the gospel of the water and the Spirit that He has permitted to our hearts, we must make the right confession to Him. We must realize, in other words, that it is through the gospel of the water and the Spirit that we have been saved by God. Our Lord has bestowed His grace on us with this

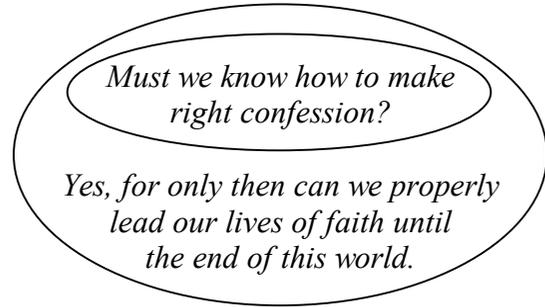
right confession, so that we may, through the gospel of the water and the Spirit, be freed from our own darkness at all times. In short, true confession is made up of the admission of our sins to God and of our correct faith in the gospel of the water and the Spirit.

Since the salvation that the Lord has brought to us has blotted out our sins once for all with the gospel of the water and the Spirit, and all this was achieved under the consideration of the fact that we will continue to commit wrongdoing until the end of this world, He is telling us to confess and to look toward this truth. This is just like when the people of Israel looked upon the serpent on a pole (Numbers 21:8-9, John 3:14). This serpent on the pole, which implies Jesus Christ, bore all the curses of their sins. Just as the Word of God promised that he who looked upon this serpent would live, God is telling us to also look toward the Lord and confess our sins by



placing our faith in the gospel of the water and the Spirit. Since our Lord has blotted out all our sins with the gospel of the water and the Spirit, under this condition, whenever we sin in our lives, if only we would confess such sins, we will come to experience the grace of the remission of sin and see our sins cleansed away.

Now, we must always look toward the gospel of the water and the Spirit, and we must live by abiding in this light. By doing so, we can be freed from all our sins, and as a result of this, we can live our lives while having, at all times, the fellowship of faith with God in Truth. The righteous should live by making their true confession to God. So we must learn how to make this true confession of faith to God, and we must believe in it.



Those who know how to make the right confession to God can walk with the Lord until the end of this world. To do so, we must admit to God all the wrongdoings that we have committed. If we had wronged the Church by any chance, we must admit this also. In addition, any wrongdoings that we might have done to each other must be confessed personally, for only then can there be fellowship with one another. All these confessions are based on our faith in the gospel of the water and the Spirit.

Yet in today's Christianity, most people just give their prayers of repentance instead, saying



that they have sinned against God. But such prayers of repentance that is given without any faith in the gospel of the water and the Spirit cannot be the true confession. These prayers of repentance have nothing to do with the Lord, for they are given only to bring some religious comfort to one's own emotions, not to make the true confession.

Because the Lord is fundamentally the light of Truth, with this love of Truth, He has saved you and me from all our sins once for all. And, by believing in this true gospel and confessing our insufficiencies, we can have true fellowship with God. Therefore, as we carry on with our lives in this world, whenever we come to dwell in darkness, whenever we really commit evil deeds against God or each other, we must confess that such deeds are indeed wicked, and that we have indeed failed to walk in the light. The reason why we can thus make the right confession is

because we have become God's children by believing in the true gospel of His salvation. By confessing our darkness, we can fulfill our calling as the light, for we are indeed the light of this world born from God.

Can you now realize the gospel Truth of the water and the Spirit? Have you become sinless by believing in this beautiful gospel? If yes, then, is it proper for us to ignore our daily sins, since we have faith in the gospel of the water and the Spirit? No, absolutely not. Even after becoming righteous before God, we still continue to sin and to commit evil deeds, and so we cannot claim that we have not sinned. When we sin against God, we must confess to Him that we have sinned, in both our consciences and hearts, and with our lips as well.

Quite frankly, as we all carry on with our lives in this world, it is more than possible for us to commit many evil deeds and to have many



wicked thoughts. Just how many carnal blemishes do we have? And just how capable are we of committing countless carnal wrongdoings? Is this not how you and I really are before God? —Of course it is.— We must make the right confession by placing our faith in the gospel of the water and the Spirit.

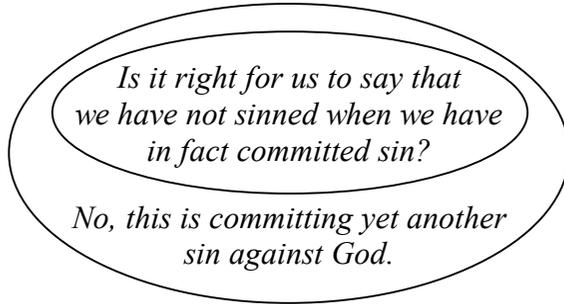
But if we say that we abide in the light, and yet do not confess our evil deeds even as we have committed them in our lives, there can be no proper fellowship with God. If we did not do the good work that saves souls before God, but instead did wicked things of seeking our own selfish ends and broke the Law of God, then we have committed evil deeds against God.

When someone commits such evil deeds, he should admit to God that he has done so; how could he say to God, “I have never sinned”? It is true that the righteous have been cleansed from all the sins they have committed by believing in

the gospel of the water and the Spirit, but do they not still commit evil deeds? They indeed do commit evil deeds, but our Lord has blotted out even these sins.

Because our Lord has blotted out all our sins with the gospel of the water and the Spirit, when we admit to Him that we have done evil deeds whenever we commit them, we can have true deep, personal relationship and true fellowship with God. By making this true confession, the righteous can always have true fellowship with God. This is possible only because God has already blotted out all our sins with the gospel of the water and the Spirit. Since our Lord has solved the problem of the sins of the world by being baptized by John and shedding His blood, by believing in this truth of the gospel, we have already become the children of the light before God. And to dwell in this light, we must make the right confession.





If, in spite of the fact that all of us thus commit all kinds of wrongdoings against God, we still claim to Him, “I have never sinned; I have done nothing wrong,” then this is nothing more than fallacious faith. When we have sinned against God everyday, and when we have committed all kinds of evil deeds, we cannot so absurdly claim to God that we have never sinned. To claim not to have sinned when we have in fact sinned is nothing more than a shameless and completely fallacious lie.

Therefore, we must correctly see all these wrongdoings with our hearts and confess them

by placing our faith in the gospel of the water and the Spirit before moving on. Only then can the truth remain in our hearts, and only then can the gospel Word of the water and the Spirit rule over us at all times.

While we are fundamentally unrighteous, our Lord is forever righteous. The Lord has really saved us from all our sins and made us sinless. This is how the righteousness of our Lord is manifested through such unrighteous beings like ourselves who commit countless sins, and how He is glorified and honored even more through us. It is because you and I are fundamentally evil that we have come to believe in our Lord, and to praise and thank the Lord for His grace of salvation.

It is because our Lord has already blotted out all our sins and perfectly saved us from the sins of the world, all out of His love for us, that we are now able to praise God forever, and will



indeed praise Him for eternity. That we love our Lord and praise Him is because His love is so great. In contrast, we cannot help but commit countless evil deeds, and this is what makes us even more thankful for the love of our Lord, praise and glorify Him even more, and have even more desire to only follow His will.

After receiving the remission of our sins, we become more aware of our own weaknesses and evilness, and this makes us fall into sin somewhat less frequently. But when we do not actually fall into our weaknesses, we also tend not to be that grateful for the grace of salvation that the Lord has bestowed on us. Every time we gather together to worship the Lord, we praise God, and with our praise, we are actually commending and adoring Him. We are praising God for all His love and blessings, for saving us from all our sins with the gospel of the water and

the Spirit, for thereby making us His own children, and for becoming our own Shepherd and protecting us.

Because of our own weaknesses, we are led to extol our God even more. If we had not been insufficient, we would not have praised God for the things that He has done for us. It is because we are insufficient, and because God has blessed such people like us, that we put together lyrics and musical notes to praise our God with our songs.

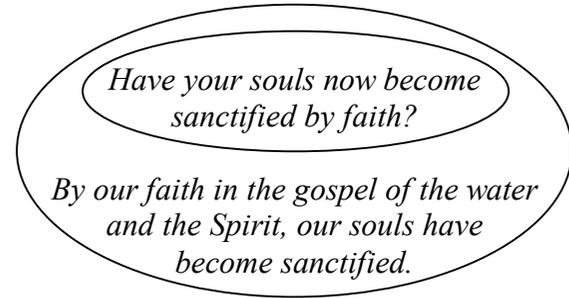
This is why those who do not accept the gospel Truth of the water and the Spirit cannot properly understand the passage from 1 John 1:8. The believers in the true gospel admit that they are weak and insufficient beings. If anyone says to God that he has not sinned when in fact he has indeed committed sin, he is deceiving himself and God as well. Such people cannot abide in the gospel Truth of the water and the Spirit.



In contrast, if you and I, who believe in the gospel of the water and the Spirit, sin against God and each other, all that we have to do is confess that we have sinned again, and once more look toward this gospel Truth by faith. Whenever we confess our evilness and transgressions, the Holy Spirit in us assures us at once, “I have washed away all your sins including these sins with the water and the Spirit.” Therefore, by our faith in this Word, we are cleansed and come to abide in the holy Truth, no matter what we might have done.

Before God, we are no more than wrongdoers who will continue to sin until the day we die. Yet despite this, our Lord has long ago washed away all our sins once for all with the gospel of the water and the Spirit. By receiving baptism and suffering on the Cross, Jesus has given true life to all of us who believe in this true gospel. This is why we must make this right confession to

God by placing our faith in the gospel of the water and the Spirit. For us to have true fellowship with God, in other words, we must frankly confess to Him all the sins that we commit.



How is your faith now? What is the current condition of your faith? Have you received the remission of your sins by believing in the gospel of the water and the Spirit? Do you understand the gospel Word of the water and the Spirit?

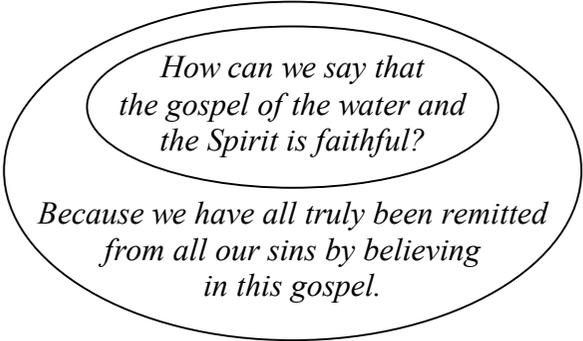
If yes, then you are now righteous before God. But you must not forget the fact that you still



cannot but sin because of your weak flesh. You, too, commit wicked deeds, and none other than this is darkness. Doing good deeds is the light. To fulfill our roles as the light before God is to save souls by preaching the gospel of the water and the Spirit to them. But, for us to remain in darkness and do evil deeds is to kill people's souls. Today's Scripture passage says that if you really believe in the gospel Word of the water and the Spirit, then you must confess the sins and evil deeds that you commit in your everyday life, and you must live by this faith. As such, whenever we realize that we have done something evil, we must admit this to God.

By thus admitting that we have sinned, and by placing our faith in the gospel of the water and the Spirit that God has permitted in us, we must escape from all such evilness and darkness. Remembering once again that the Lord has blotted out all our sins, we must dwell in the light

of God by believing in and acknowledging the gospel of the water and the Spirit. This is how we can continually offer to God a sacrifice of praise in our everyday life of faith (Hebrews 13:15). By doing so, we can abide in the light and do the works that truly save people's souls. Our Lord has truly enabled us to always live in the light. Through this kind of true confession, we can indeed be freed from all our sins and bring joy to our God.



*How can we say that  
the gospel of the water and  
the Spirit is faithful?*

*Because we have all truly been remitted  
from all our sins by believing  
in this gospel.*



This is why verse 9 says, *“If we confess our sins, He is faithful and just to forgive us our sins and to cleanse us from all unrighteousness.”* The main purpose of this passage is to let us know and live a life of true confession by placing our faith in the gospel of the water and the Spirit. But if one misunderstands this passage, he may think that this is a way to wash away his sins, and today, because of such mistaken thoughts, there have also arisen many people who have gone astray and often resort to the prayers of repentance.

Just because someone confesses his sins, in other words, does not mean that our Lord would simply wash away his sins right then. That God would cleanse us from all unrighteousness if we confess our sins is because of the gospel Word of the water and the Spirit, and only under the condition that our faith is placed in this gospel.

The true gospel of the water and the Spirit was

completed 2,000 years ago when our Lord came to this earth, took upon our sins of mankind once for all by being baptized by John the Baptist at the age of 30, carried these sins of the world to the Cross and was crucified 3 years later, and rose from the dead again. Through *“one Man’s righteous act”* (Romans 5:18), God washed away all our sins once for all with the gospel Truth of the water and the Spirit.

Therefore, those who believe in the water and the Spirit, the light of God, can receive the remission of their sins for believing in this light. This is why if we admit our sins and confess them whenever we sin against God or each other, we can be cleansed by our faith, for He is “faithful and just” to have already remitted away our sins with the gospel of the water and the Spirit. This is why the Bible says here that if we confess, our Lord is faithful and just to forgive us from all our unrighteousness.



This passage was spoken to none other than to those who believe in the gospel of the water and the Spirit. For us to abide in the light, the Lord admonishes us to confess our sins by placing our faith in the gospel of the water and the Spirit. He is saying to us, “My children, I have washed away all your sins faithfully and justly through My righteous act, through the gospel of the water and the Spirit.”

This is why the Apostle John said that God is “faithful and just.” Because God’s light of salvation that was fulfilled long ago has already blotted out all our sins, by believing in this love of Truth (2 Thessalonians 2:10), our hearts have been cleansed at all times. As our minds at times dwell in darkness, our hearts are troubled, and as we fail to do what pleases God, our hearts fall into darkness. But because this oppressive darkness has already been blotted out long ago by our Lord’s work of salvation, we can restore

the status of light at once whenever we confess our sins frankly by placing our faith in the true gospel. By the power of this gospel of the water and the Spirit that has blotted out our sins long ago, our Lord has cleansed us from all our transgressions. The power of this gospel with which the Lord has blotted out all our sins, of the past, the present, and the future, has also removed from us all the condemnations of our sins. This Truth, in other words, has completely freed all those who believe in God’s gospel of the water and the Spirit from all their sins, from all their darkness.

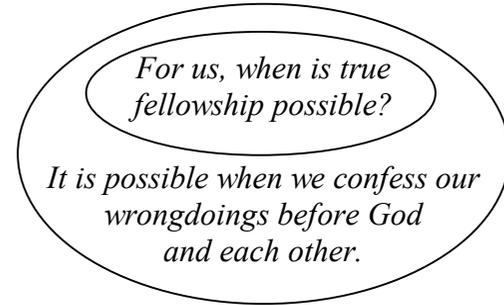
*Has our Lord already cleansed us  
from all our unrighteousness?*

*Yes, He has already blotted out  
all our sins once for all.*



Our Lord says that He is faithful and just to forgive us our sins and to cleanse us from all unrighteousness. Through the true light of the water and the Spirit that has already blotted out our sins, our Lord has saved us from all our iniquities. Though we are always insufficient in our flesh, the Lord has saved you and me, so that we may always be clean and perfect.

The only thing we have to keep in mind here is that as we carry on with our lives in this world, there are still times when we dwell in darkness and commit evil deeds, and the Bible tells us that we have to confess our wrongdoings as they are. The reason why we have to do so is because true confession is absolutely indispensable for us to have fellowship with God, and fellowship with His saints and servants as well. If we say, while having darkness in our hearts, “I have done nothing wrong; I have not sinned,” then there can be no fellowship.



## **True Fellowship among the Saints**

Therefore, true fellowship among the saints can be had only when we confess to each other any wrongdoings that we might have committed against one another: “I have wronged you, my brother. I said some things that I shouldn’t have said, but I meant no harm. Please, forgive me.” Like this, it is right for us to clearly admit our wrongdoings and ask for forgiveness. If the other party finds it hard to tolerate our mistakes, we



just have to keep asking for forgiveness until reconciliation is reached. True reconciliation can only be possible when we confess our wrongdoings frankly and ask for forgiveness from one another.

When we confess our wrongdoings to each other, because the Lord has blotted out all our sins, we can forgive one another, thanks to this love of the Lord. By the power of this gospel of Truth that has blotted out all our sins, we can be at peace with each other in Christ. As we carry on with our lives, it is possible that we would end up building walls in our hearts because of each other's mistakes. But when we believe in the power of the gospel of the water and the Spirit, the unconditional love of God flows into our hearts, and this love makes us remove such walls from our hearts. In this way, these walls that separate us the saints from one another are brought down by placing our faith in the gospel

of the water and the Spirit and confessing our wrongdoings to each other.

Because we are only too human, we have wronged each other, committed contemptible and filthy sins against one another, and we will continue committing such sins in the days to come. When we are separated from each other because of such wrongdoings, what removes this separation is confession. "You must have been troubled and disappointed by what I did to you. I am sorry; it was my fault." It is when we say these things that there can be true fellowship.

You need not to swear when you confess your wrongdoings, for the Bible says, "*Do not swear, either by heaven or by earth or with any other oath. But let your 'Yes' be 'Yes,' and your 'No,' 'No,' lest you fall into judgment*" (James 5:12). Rather, if we would only say, "It was my fault. I am sorry," then all discords can end. Our Lord already shouldered all such wrongdoings, all

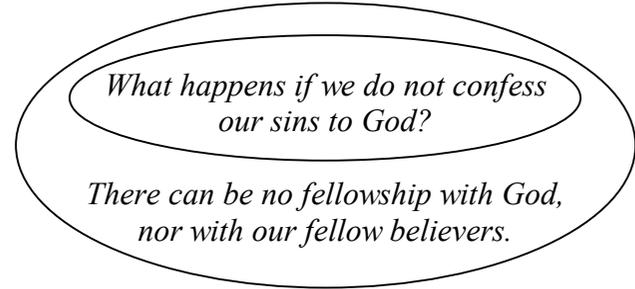


such wickedness. As such, in the light of our Lord, we can all have fellowship with each other. If we know and believe in the gospel of the water and the Spirit that the Word of God speaks of, then its power is manifested in our everyday life on its own.

My fellow believers, the strong must embrace the weak and the weak must have confidence. Those who can open themselves up to someone who is weaker than them and are able to admit their faults are really the people of strength.

When trouble arises among the saints, it is usually owing to the faults of both sides. If we were to assign all our blame only on one side, this person find it hard to bear this injury to his pride, and it is also not proper before God. Each of us has wronged one another. This is why all that we have to do is just say that we are sorry, and admit our wrongdoings. Without such confession, we can never have true fellowship

with each other.



If there is no true confession of sin in our lives, can there be no true fellowship with God, nor with each other. How and with what kind of faith, then, can we have fellowship with God and the righteous? If there is something wrong or evil that we have done before God, then we must know how to confess such evil deeds: “God, I committed such and such sins. I recognize my mistakes.”

When we admit our wrongdoings to God like



this, the Lord is faithful and just to cleanse our hearts with the gospel of the water and the Spirit that has already blotted out our sins. Our Lord will then tell us, “I have blotted out even those sins,” and He will embrace us in His arms with the His love of Truth that has washed away all our sins. On the condition of having blotted out our sins, our Lord wants to have true fellowship with us.

In the Old Testament, it is written, “*‘Come now, and let us reason together,’ Says the LORD, ‘Though your sins are like scarlet, They shall be as white as snow; Though they are red like crimson, They shall be as wool’*” (Isaiah 1:18). On His part, God has, through His Son Jesus Christ, fulfilled our perfect remission of sin for 100%, once for all, with the water, the blood, and the Spirit (1 John 5:3-7). Having thus made His Son take upon all the sins of the world, condemned these sins, and thereby blotted them

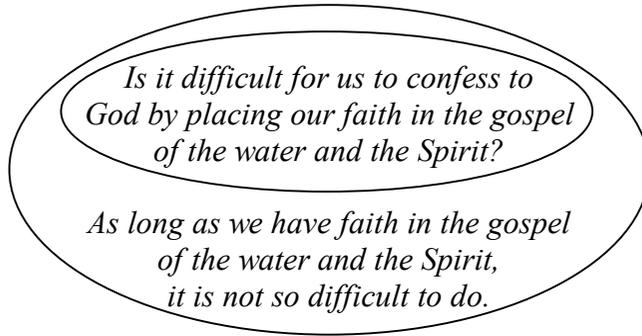
all out for 100%, God the Father is now telling us to believe in this and to confess our sins by faith.

This is the reason why we can confess on our part. Why? Because this presupposes the fact that God has fully and completely forgiven all our sins for 100%, and it is because of this condition that we can confess in peace. And by faith, we the righteous can confess our faults among ourselves as well.

We really don’t realize just how arrogant and selfish we are. For example, in my church, we sometimes get together to play soccer. When we play, there are times when the members of our congregation do not even bother to pass the ball to me, playing the game all on their own. I would then say to them, “Let’s not play soccer anymore.” Even this kind of act is evil. Even though we have a friendly game, we all try to do all we can to win, and if we still end up losing, we want to spoil the moment—such are our



human hearts. This examples is actually not that bad; in fact, there are far more examples that are even worse than this.



Confessing our sins to God is not such a difficult thing to do. All that we need to have before God is faith in the gospel of the water and the Spirit. Nor is too difficult to confess our sins to each other. “Brother/sister, I made such and such mistakes. I am sorry. Please forgive me. I felt really sorry at that time.” If we would just say that we are sorry and affirm the gospel of the

water and the Spirit in our hearts, we can all forgive each other. Is there anyone among the righteous who will judge us after saying that we are sorry? Who can ever judge anyone else? On the contrary, it is the sin of the heart that does not know how to apologize that should be condemned.

We need to know how to apologize when we have done something wrong against others. Those who are ahead must know how to apologize to those who are following them, and those who are following must also know how to apologize to those who are ahead of them. Only then can there be fellowship with each other in Christ, or otherwise there can be no proper fellowship. Only when we are able to make the right confession can there be fellowship with each other and with God. If we were to insist blindly that we have done nothing wrong, and that it is only the other party that has wronged us,



then there just cannot be any real fellowship. The same principle applies to our relationship with God as well.

Do we or do we not wrong each other? When we like someone, we are so friendly that there seems to nothing that we would not do for him, but when we do not like someone, we end up hating him. Is this not true for our sisters also?—Of course it is.— Our brothers have also wronged each other. So have our pastors wronged each other. If such wrongdoings cause us problems, are not beneficial to the spreading of the gospel, and becomes stumbling blocks that prevent us from having fellowship with each other, then we must think about our mistakes and confess our wrongdoings sincerely. Regardless of how others might think, when we come to recognize our mistakes, all that we have to do is admit our wrongdoings and apologize for them. We need to bring ourselves to admit and confess

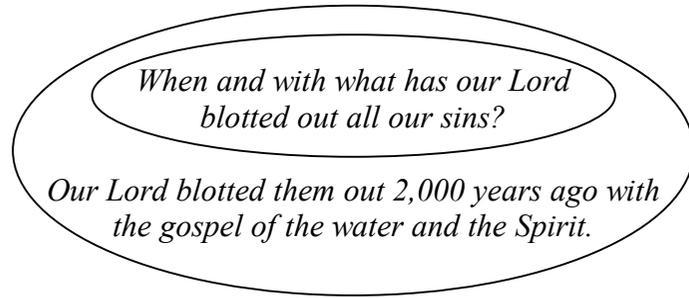
our wrongdoings to each other, and to say that we are sorry.

Though the problem of all our sins has been solved before God, if something that we have done appears to have built a wall among us, we have to apologize to each other and reconcile, or otherwise we will end up parting from each other. And when we serve each other and cherish one another in God’s love, we can come to have fellowship with each other. This is the life of light. To care for each other, to love one another, and to tolerate each other—this is the life of light that every Christian ought to live.

Darkness is committing evil deeds and trying to hurt each other. So not to abide in evilness is enough reason for us to be at peace with each in the love of Christ by faith. Though each of us is insufficient, we must love one another just as God has loved us. The Lord commanded us, “Love one another.” As such, all that we have to



do is treat each other generously in God's love, through the love of Christ. If we end up having no fellowship, only the Devil will be happy. As well, if this happens, the gospel Truth of the water and the Spirit cannot work in us.



Our Lord has already blotted out all our sins. It was about 2,000 years ago that our Lord blotted out all the sins of the entire world with His baptism and bloodshed. He already blotted out the sins of your descendants, the sins of your forefathers also, and your sins of the present and the future as well. What, then, must we do? We

must have true fellowship with each other in the love of Jesus Christ by believing in this love.

Though the actual contents may be different, if we are disgusted by each other and find it hard to put up with one another, then this can only mean that we have wronged each other. From time to time, we do in fact sin. It is quite possible for us to do wicked things to each other. But it matters little as long as we make true confession to each other.

Whenever Christians commit evil deeds against God and each other, at the very moment they realize this, if they admit that they have done wrong, and recognize that all their sins were washed away through the gospel of the water and the Spirit, they can be immediately freed from all darkness. This is because we have in our hearts the powerful Truth of the gospel of the water and the Spirit. Because this true gospel is in our hearts, and because you and I believe in



the light of God, darkness can no longer rule over us. It is by believing in the gospel of the water and the Spirit that we are shed from darkness and transformed into the life of light. And in this bright light, we can love the Lord, love our brothers and sisters, love the Church, and love other souls—that is, we can live our lives of light.

Since our Lord has cleansed us from all our unrighteousness with the true gospel, all that we have to do is confess the sins that we have committed by faith, by believing in this gospel. This is why 1 John 1:10 says, *“If we say that we have not sinned, we make Him a liar, and His word is not in us.”* We are someone who commits sin at all times. So when we recognize the gospel of the water and the Spirit, and also acknowledge our wrongdoings to both God and each other, the power of the gospel Word will work in our lives, ensuring that we would lack

nothing to live as the children of the light. Through the gospel of the water and the Spirit, we have now become the ones who can properly lead the life of the light.

The Bible says that if we say to God that we have not sinned, we make Him a liar. So everyday and every moment, whenever we sin, we must confess to God that we have sinned. But if someone says, “I’ve done nothing wrong. I’ve committed no sin. I’ve done nothing evil,” then he is fallaciously turning God into a liar. We are simply at loss for words before such people with no common sense.

If our deeds turn out to have been wrong even though they were unintentional, then all that we have to do is admit it and say, “I am sorry. I have unintentionally made mistakes.” Yet there are people who are unable to do so, and instead try to hold onto their pride. People who are stubborn with little character even claim, “I’ve done



nothing wrong before God, nor before others. I've committed no sin at all. There is nothing evil or wrong that I've done, nor have I done anything wrong before God's Church." When encountering such people, we just don't know what to say. Those who, like this, do not know themselves have hearts that are evil and as hard as crocodile skin. What could we, then, possibly say to those whose hearts are so hardened like this that they wouldn't even admit that they have done wrong?

To be human is to be imperfect, and it is with those who show this human imperfection that we sympathize. For us to show tolerance for each other, shouldn't we be able to see this imperfection in all of us, that we are indeed human with blood and flesh? We, the believers in the gospel of the water and the Spirit, need to have tender hearts within the gospel Truth. We need to believe in God's love, and in this love,

we also need to know how to soften our hearts and admit our wrongdoings. Each of our hearts will then become tender, and peace and harmony will come to characterize our relationship in love. If anyone's heart is too hard to recognize the Word of God, all that awaits him is spiritual death. The kind of faith that does not know how to confess can never bring any benefits at all.

As we admit our wrongdoings to each other, we serve the gospel of the water and the Spirit, exalt the love of God, extol the salvation that God has brought to us, thank Him for the His blessings, giving thanks and glory by hoping for the blessings that He will give us in the next world—this is how we can lead successful lives.

God is light, and for us to have fellowship with Him, we must have faith in the gospel Truth of the water and the Spirit. John the Apostle wants us to stand firm on the gospel of the water and the Spirit so that we could abide in God's



light and have fellowship with the Father and the Son (1 John 1:3). The Lord has given us eternal life through the gospel of the water and the Spirit. Even before the foundation of the world, God the Father had planned to save us in Christ, and when the time came, He sent His Son Jesus Christ to this earth, and made Him accept all our sins by being baptized by John the Baptist and made Him shed His blood and be crucified to be condemned for these sins. Christ then rose from the dead again, and has given us new life, His own life. This is how God has brought us to life.

Therefore, we have now become His family who can share true fellowship with the Father and His Son, and with the other children of God as well. And the teaching on true confession is basically for the born-again. I can say all these things here because you all believe in the gospel of the water and the Spirit. In fact, this message is not something that is intended for religionists,

nor should it be explained to those who have not yet been born again.

Dear born-again saints, have we or have we not wronged each other? Of course we have. If, despite such wrongdoings, we do not confess them to each other, our relationship will stagnate. We must then confess our wrongdoings to each other, saying, “I apologize for my mistakes; it was entirely my fault.” All that we have to do, in other words, is just confess our flaws.

When such confession is made, is there anyone among us who would say, “So why did you do that? Come here and pay for what you’ve done”? If there is anyone like this, then no one will ever be able to confess to such a person again. If we are unable to confess our mistakes to each other, then there is neither fellowship nor the communion of the heart—this is a great loss for all of us, and such a life is none other than a living hell. We know that it is when we admit our



wrongdoings, in our faith in the gospel of the water and the Spirit, that there is true fellowship. And we have seen countless times that in it, love is also found.

Right now, as the Apostle John is telling us to confess our sins in God's light of Truth, we need to look back and examine how our lives of faith have been. As we continue to carry on with our lives of faith, there are times when Satan, seizing his opportunity, tries to incite discord among us, so that we would fight with each other, condemn one another, wave our fingers at each other, and judge one another. But none of us can ever judge the righteous. It is the Lord who is the only Judge.

And because our Lord has loved us, He has already blotted out all our sins with the gospel of the water and the Spirit. What remains for us to do is only the duty to confess our wrongdoings to God and to each other. There is nothing else to

do. Who could possibly judge whom? There is no other Judge but Jesus Christ. Nor can anyone be more righteous than anyone else. Those who believe in the gospel of the water and the Spirit are all equally righteous. The only thing that sets apart one human being from another is whether or not he believes in this gospel of the water and the Spirit; there is nothing else that sets us apart.

It is because Satan has spread chaffs all around the world and corrupted everything that Christianity has, to this day, held onto its fallacious beliefs. All this time, people have learned only such fallacies, and so when they hear our sermons, they are new to them. And there are also those who say that they cannot believe in what they hear, since it is completely opposite to their own sermons. When we hear what the evangelical pastors preach and what our pastors who believe in the gospel of the water and the Spirit preach, we can easily realize at



once that these sermons are indeed completely opposite to each other. They are 100% opposite.

A believer who attends an evangelical church once heard my sermon, and said to me, “You are so different from the pastor of my church! You took the same biblical passage, and yet your sermon reached a completely opposite conclusion!” I then said to him, “Yes, you are right. Then one of us must be right, and the other must be wrong. Whose sermon do you think is right?” He then told me that he thought his own pastor’s sermon was right. Of course he must have felt this way. But you must take the Word of God as your standard, and objectively look at what it actually says, because God’s Word is the only benchmark that can put an end to every spiritual debate.

That there is fellowship with God means that there is true fellowship in the love of His gospel. This is why 1 John 2:1-2 state, “*My little*

*children, these things I write to you, so that you may not sin. And if anyone sins, we have an Advocate with the Father, Jesus Christ the righteous. And He Himself is the propitiation for our sins, and not for ours only but also for the whole world.*” To blot out the sins of the whole world, our Lord came to this earth, took upon all these sins of the world by being baptized by John the Baptist, and was condemned for them by going to the Cross and shedding His blood on it. Before offering His body to God the Father, our Lord first accepted our sins by being baptized by John the Baptist. It was only then that He laid down His life on the Cross and offered His body to God. In this way, our Lord became the propitiation for our sins that had separated us mankind from God.

Because our Lord became our own sacrificial offering, if we humans would only believe in this Jesus Christ who has blotted out our sins with the



water and the Spirit, we will all receive the blessings of being remitted from our sins, of becoming God's own children, and of boldly coming and standing before the presence of our God. And God the Father has accepted as His own children all those who believe in this gospel of Truth, that His Son has blotted out all our sins with the gospel of the water and the Spirit. Because we believe in this gospel Truth, there is no obstacle for God to make us His own children. God has made us, who believe in this true gospel, His light and children, He has enabled us to live as the light of this world, and He has accepted us as the people of His Kingdom to come.

Therefore, we must recognize just how important and proper is the right confession that is made in the gospel of the water and the Spirit. We must truly realize and believe how this confession is such a good prescription to brighten

up the hearts of us the righteous who have received the remission of sin. Those of us who have truly become righteous are all capable of making the right confession. God has made the believers in the gospel of the water and the Spirit His own children, who can make this proper confession.

If you and I sin and commit evil deeds out of our insufficiencies, all that we have to do is confess. And we should believe once again that the Lord already took care of all our sins and all our curses when He came to this earth. By taking upon our sins and being condemned for them, our Lord has saved us from all punishments. Through faith, we must confess to each other. We need to examine each other to see if anyone is troubled by us, and where there are issues that we find difficult to tolerate from one another, all that we have to do is confess our wrongdoings and ask for reconciliation. The powerful gospel



will then enables us to tolerate all. If anyone says to you that he can't stand you anymore and is therefore leaving you, don't just let him go; instead, sowing the gospel of the water and the Spirit and taking the power of this gospel as your bridge, come to reconcile with each other.

We are so thankful to God for giving us the gospel of the water and the Spirit. We are also infinitely grateful for the fact that we can have fellowship with God. In what do we have this fellowship? It is in the gospel of the water and the Spirit, the love of God, that we have fellowship. Because God is light, because He is love, and because we believe in this love, we can have fellowship with God, all thanks to our faith in this love.

What about you then? Do you have fellowship with God? Do you really have this true fellowship through your faith in the gospel Truth of the water and the Spirit? Those who do not

know the gospel of the water and the Spirit and still retain their sins can have no fellowship with God. When such people who have not received the remission of their sins call upon God and say, "Father, please forgive my sins. I am sinful," He will only answer, "You are not My child; you are the Devil's child." Under the test of the gospel of the water and the Spirit, the children of God and the children of the Devil are manifested apart (1 John 3:10).

I thank the Lord for giving us true fellowship with God. Let us not, then, build walls between ourselves, but let us have fellowship with each other. Building such walls will only please the Devil, who is an expert in provoking our desires of flesh such as "idolatry, sorcery, hatred, contentions, jealousies, outbursts of wrath, selfish ambitions, dissensions, and heresies" (Galatians 5:20).

My fellow Christians, no matter what happens,



and no matter what insufficiencies there are, infighting among the saints can never be good. Instead of quarrelling, we must first admit our own wrongdoings. We must exert self-control by confessing our faults to each other in the faith of the true gospel. What did I say pleases the Devil? The Devil is pleased when we quarrel with each other and build walls between us. He takes joy when we fight with each over who is better than whom, as well as when we refuse to admit our wrongdoings to one another.

Does the fact that we are the born-again righteous mean that we make no mistake at all? Far from it, we still remain always insufficient, making mistakes, slipping with our tongues, and committing wrongdoings. Whenever we do so, we must admit and apologize for our flaws. Because the Lord has loved us, we are now sinless by faith. We actually have no sin. This is because the Lord has blotted out all our sins.

You and I must be well aware of Satan's treacherous schemes. It is the Devil that incites discord among mankind. If we fall into this trap and quarrel with one another, each of us will not be able to serve the gospel but end up dead spiritually.

Rather than pointing our fingers at each other, we should first think about our own mistakes before God. It is not what others say, but ourselves, that we should be examining. We will then realize what we have done wrong, and all that we have to do then is confess our wrongdoings to each other and correct our mistakes for one another. If we cannot entirely correct ourselves for 100% no matter how hard we try, then we should just live by faith until the day our Lord returns, even as we remain insufficient.

We must have faith and be wise. And we must thereby vanquish Satan's schemes with our faith



in the gospel of the water and the Spirit. By confessing our wrongdoings and believing in the gospel of the water and the Spirit, we must abide in the light. I give my true thanks to God. I cannot thank Him enough.

There is so much work that we the righteous need to do before God to spread the gospel of the water and the Spirit. If we continue do this work, the gospel will be spread far further, by thousands and tens of thousands of fold. The Lord will make sure, without fail, that we would indeed achieve this. How could we ever accomplish this with our own strength? It is because God has given us power and blessed us that this will be achieved. Is this not the case? Of course it is.

It is to the people of the whole world that we are preaching the gospel of the water and the Spirit. God has entrusted us with this good work of spreading the gospel, and it is through us that

He works. This is real. We are now indeed spreading the gospel to the entire world. I believe that God has given us the power to fulfill this work of spreading the gospel throughout the whole world, for while we have no power on our own, our God is almighty.

I give even more thanks to God for enabling us to make the true confession.

Hallelujah! ☒



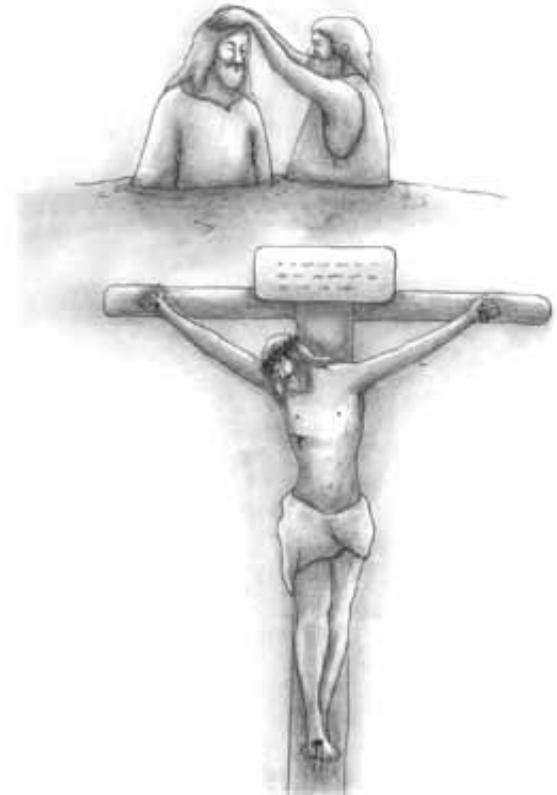
# **CHAPTER 2**

---

## **SERMON 1**

**(1 John 2:1-5)**

**“Jesus Christ Is the True  
God”**



[Contents](#)



## Jesus Christ Is The True God

< 1 John 2:1-5 >

**“My little children, these things I write to you, so that you may not sin. And if anyone sins, we have an Advocate with the Father, Jesus Christ the righteous. And He Himself is the propitiation for our sins, and not for ours only but also for the whole world. Now by this we know that we know Him, if we keep His commandments. He who says, ‘I know Him,’ and does not keep His commandments, is a liar, and the truth is not in him. But whoever keeps His word, truly the love of God is perfected in him. By this we know that we are in Him.”**

## The Main Theme of 1 John

In 1 John 2:1, the Apostle John says, *“My little children, these things I write to you, so that you may not sin.”* He explains that the purpose behind his writing of 1 John is so that the saints would not commit the sins of not believing in Jesus, the true God. In the phrase from this passage, “so that you may not sin,” ‘sin’ here indicates ‘the sin leading to death’ (1 John 5:16). John wants all the saints to stand firm on the gospel of the water and the Spirit. He also wants them to believe that Jesus Christ is God Himself, the Son of God, and also the Savior who took away our sins.

Reminding everyone, both the saints and unbelievers alike, that Jesus Christ is the true God and Savior, the Apostle John admonishes us not to commit the sin of disbelieving in the divinity of Jesus Christ. While it is possible for



us to sin before God in our flesh and hearts, there is one sin that we must never commit. It is the sin of not believing in the baptism that Jesus the Son of God received to accept our sins, and the precious blood that this Son of God shed for us. It is this sin that the Apostle John wants to prevent us from committing, for it will surely lead us to eternal death.

We believe that Jesus Christ is God, and that He is the Lord of creation who made the entire universe and us. The Bible is telling us that the divine Jesus Christ actually exists, for He is not elusive, but is in fact God Himself and the Savior of mankind. Apart from Jesus Christ, who could truthfully claim himself as the true God and Savior? Jesus Christ is the Omnipotent God who has the power to create the universe. No one but Jesus Christ has the power to make this world.

Jesus is fundamentally the Son of God, and for us, He is God Himself. It is by Jesus Christ that

this world was created (John 1:10). Jesus Christ is the God of all of us. Who is the Lord of all things in this world? Who is the God that has saved us from the sins of this world? Who paid the wages of all our sins? It is Jesus Christ our God, for He has, being God Himself and the Savior, cleansed us from all the sins of the world with the gospel Truth of the water and the Spirit, and has saved us by being condemned in our place. Jesus Christ is the true God and the Savior for all those who are to believe.

Therefore, if we do not believe in Him, we are sinning against God. You must recognize that not believing in Him is to commit a mortal sin against God. While we can be forgiven for virtually all the sins that we commit before God, there is one sin that cannot be remitted away; that is, the sin of not believing in Jesus Christ our God can never be forgiven. Jesus Christ, the Savior of mankind, could wash away our sins



through the baptism that He received and the blood that He shed on the Cross. However, this sin of not believing in Jesus as the true God constitutes a sin that fundamentally cannot be washed away.

As such, we can come to possess true faith when we first begin with the belief that Jesus is our true God. The Apostle John tells us that he wants us not to commit the sin of not believing that Jesus is our God. Jesus Christ, the true God, came to this earth to accomplish the gospel of the water and the Spirit. He was baptized, shed His blood on the Cross, and rose from the dead again, and thereby became the true Savior of those who believe. The Apostle John earnestly wants everyone to believe in this gospel of Truth (1 John 5:3-6).

## **This Was the Faith of the Apostle John**

The Apostle John admonishes us to believe that the divine Jesus is the Creator God who made the universe and all things in it, and that He is the only begotten Son for God the Father, and the true Savior for us. While people generally acknowledge that Jesus is the Savior, they do not recognize that this divine Jesus Christ not only took away our sins with His baptism and bloodshed, but is also the true God.

Even among today's Christians who profess to believe in Jesus as their Savior, few actually know and believe that Jesus is the Creator God. Many people think that Jesus is somehow insufficient to be God, since He has God the Father, and for the Father Jesus is only His Son. However, the name "Jesus" is a title indicating that He came to this world as the Savior, and the



name “Christ” means the Messiah, the One who was anointed. In the Old Testament, there are three kinds of persons to be anointed— kings, prophets, and priests. Therefore, Jesus Christ is the Savior who has become the King, the Prophet, and the High Priest. He is fundamentally the true God, but He came to this earth with these three offices, He was baptized by John the Baptist and shed His blood on the Cross to save us from all the sins of the world, and has indeed perfectly delivered and saved all those who believe in Him from all their sins.

When Jesus our Savior died on the Cross as the Savior of mankind, his persecutors put up a sign that read, “The King of the Jews.” They did so to ridicule Him. However, Jesus is truly God for us, and He is clearly the Creator God for the universe and all things in it. He is not just the King of the Jews, but the King of the entire universe. For us and everyone else alike, this

divine Jesus forever exists as God.

Therefore, believing that Jesus is God, and that He has saved us from our sins with the gospel Truth of the water and the Spirit, we must live in thankfulness. This Truth must not be altered, for Jesus is God for both the believers and unbelievers alike. Imagine here for a moment that someone, covering his eyes with his palms, is shouting under the sun, “There is no sun!” He sees no sun because he has blocked it from his eyes, but this does not mean that there is no sun. Everyone else sees the sun, and if he would only removed his hands from his eyes, he, too, would see it. This is exactly how the unbelievers are acting when they do not admit the Truth that Jesus Christ is the true God and that He came to this earth to accomplish the gospel of the water and the Spirit.

Jesus Christ is the absolute God for all the people who believe in Him, He is forever the



King of kings as well, and He will remain as God for eternity. For those who do not believe in Jesus Christ as their God, He may not be the King, but for those who believe in Him, Jesus Christ is the everlasting King, the eternal Judge, and the everlasting High Priest. To all the believers, Jesus Christ is the absolute and perfect God.

Therefore, those of us who believe in the gospel of the water and the Spirit must also have this faith that believes in the divine Jesus as our Savior God. Just as the Apostle John confessed in 1 John 5:20, *“This is the true God and eternal life,”* for us also, Jesus is the true God, the true Savior, and the everlasting King. We must believe in Jesus Christ who has saved us from all our sins and given us new life, and who is the everlasting God and the Son of God the Father, as our own Savior.

We must realize that Jesus our God made us

from the time of the creation of the heavens and the earth. We must believe that the Triune God made us in His image, that the One who created the universe is actually Jesus Christ, and that this divine Jesus Christ is the God who created the whole world, both seen and unseen by our eyes.

As Genesis 1:27 says, *“God created man in His own image; in the image of God He created him,”* the divine Jesus Christ is the absolute God who created the universe and all things in it. Jesus Christ our God is the Lord of life for all creation. As the Bible says, *“In Him was life”* (John 1:4), and also says, *“As many as received Him, to them He gave the right to become children of God, to those who believe in His name”* (John 1:12). All these speak of the power of Jesus Christ.



## The Divine Jesus Is the Absolute God for Us

Do you truly believe in Jesus as God with all your hearts? The Apostle John wants all the readers of his Epistles to have faith in this Truth. And he does not want them to commit the sin of not having this faith. If the Apostle John believed in the divine Jesus as his God, then our faith in this Truth is right.

The other Apostles, although they did bear witness of Jesus' divinity, generally emphasized more than John that He has become our Savior as the Son of God. In contrast, the Apostle John testified Jesus more as God Himself. This is why of the four Gospels, the Gospel of John is called as the Gospel of Eagle. The Apostle John had soared spiritually that much higher, to the highest level, and looked toward the divine Jesus, the Highest of all.

Although he was the youngest of the twelve disciples of Jesus, he was the disciple that knew Jesus most profoundly. This is why he could testify in John 1:10, *“The world was made through Him, and the world did not know Him.”* What a disciple of God with such spiritual discernment is John? The Apostle John said that “the world was made through Him,” because he had met Jesus Christ, the true God. He also said, *“This is the true God and eternal life”* (1 John 5:20). John believed, in other words, that this God was none other than Jesus Christ, and that He is the One who gives us eternal life.

Do you know Jesus as God Himself, or do you know Him only as the Son of God? Do you know and believe that the divine Jesus is the true God to you? Your faith must not be damaged fatally by mistakenly thinking that the divine Jesus Christ is not the Creator of the universe and all things, when He is, in fact, this very Lord and



God.

You must not commit the sins of blaspheming the Holy Spirit. That the divine Jesus is your Savior is a self-evident fact. He is fundamentally God. It is because Jesus is God who created the universe that He, to save His people from their sins, came to this earth incarnated in the flesh of man, was baptized, shed His blood on the Cross, and has thereby saved His believers from their sins and condemnation, thus giving them the remission of their sins and eternal life all at once. Jesus is the God who had abandoned His glory to save us from our sins through 33 years of His life. But in His essence, He is God Himself.

## **Do You Believe That Jesus Is God, and That He Is Our Helper?**

Do you believe that the Father of Jesus is our

Father God, and that He is the same God for us? Jesus Christ is the Son of God, but He is also the true God for us. Jesus the true God came to this world in the flesh of men to save all of us through His baptism and bloodshed. This is why the Apostle John said, *“This is He who came by water and blood—Jesus Christ; not only by water, but by water and blood. And it is the Spirit who bears witness, because the Spirit is truth. For there are three that bear witness in heaven: the Father, the Word, and the Holy Spirit; and these three are one. And There are three that bear witness on earth: the Spirit, the water, and the blood; and these three agree as one”* (1 John 5:6-8). The baptism that Jesus Christ received from John and His bloodshed, therefore, are the Truth of our salvation.

Here the Bible tells us that Jesus is God Himself. And it tells us that this divine Jesus Christ is the Savior God who came to this earth



incarnated in the flesh of man, took upon our sins by being baptized, bore all the condemnation of our sins by being crucified, and has thereby delivered us from our sins. Because Jesus Christ is fundamentally the true God, He is more than able to become the true Savior for all of us who believe in the gospel Word of the water and the Spirit. As such, for those who believe in everything that He did when He came to this earth, they can not only receive the remission of their sins, but they can also be clothed in the great power that turns them into God's own children.

## **The Power of the Gospel of the Water and the Spirit Is Great**

This evening, two more converts sent their testimony of salvation through email, for which I

thanked the Lord. The testimony was that they have now been delivered from their sins since they believe that Jesus the true God has saved us from all our sins by coming to this earth incarnated in the flesh of man, being baptized and crucified to death, and rising from the dead again. These believers testified, "Before I came to know the gospel of the water and the Spirit, I always carried my sins with me, and it seems as if my life of faith was stuck in the same gear all the time. But the moment I realized the gospel Truth of the water and the Spirit, I now came to know the clear Truth of salvation."

We, too, now believe that Jesus is God Himself. We believe this with all our hearts, for He is the Savior who lacks nothing to deliver and save us from the sins of the world with the gospel of the water and the Spirit, as He is fundamentally God Himself.



Countless Christians throughout the world have no problem believing that Jesus is the Son of God, but many of them neither know nor believe that He is fundamentally the true God, and that He has become the Savior of all of us by coming to this earth incarnated in the flesh of man, taking upon all our sins by being baptized by John, and shedding His blood on the Cross. They are committing a mortal sin against God by not believing in the divinity of Jesus.

The place of birth for Martin Luther, the pioneer of the Reformation, is Germany. As well as launching the Reformation, he also translated the Bible into the German vernacular. However, even in Luther's homeland, the subject of whether Jesus is God or a mere creature despite being the Son of God became a point of contention among theologians, and as a result, many people, not recognizing Jesus as God, ended up proposing groundless sophistry, thus

only leading to the development of today's theological system called as Historical Criticism or Higher Criticism. Their understanding of Jesus, in other words, reached the following erroneous conclusion: "Although He is the Son of God, He is only one of God's creations. So while it is true that Jesus Christ is the Son of God, fundamentally speaking, He is not divine." However, Jesus Christ is in fact God Himself in His essence. And He has God the Father.

A while ago, a controversial movie, entitled "The Last Temptation of Christ," was on show. It depicted Jesus as a man who was falling in love with Mary Magdalene, and then resuming to fulfill his duties. Like this, most people do not realize and do not believe that Jesus is fundamentally the true God. So we see that even as Christianity has been propagated for over 2,000 years until now, there still aren't that many people in the whole world who have the firm



belief that the divine Jesus Christ is God Himself.

The reality is that a biblically sound theological system has not yet been established in today's Christianity. How can a biblically sound theology be constructed without the cornerstone of the sound faith that believes in Jesus as the true God? As a result, they remain completely ignorant of the Truth that Jesus is fundamentally the true God. They studied Jesus as a theological scholarship, but they failed to reach the full understanding. Though people have studied Jesus, they still live as sinners even as they profess to believe in Him, for they do not know the gospel of the water and the Spirit that can wash away their hearts' sins.

As such, everyone must now realize and believe that Jesus is fundamentally God Himself, that He therefore created whole universe, and that He is the Savior who, when man, whom He

created, fell into sin, came to this earth and saved sinners from all their sins through the gospel of the water and the Spirit.

So placing our faith in Jesus Christ our God, we have preached the gospel of the water and the Spirit. Therefore, many people will come to know and believe in Jesus Christ as the true God and Savior of mankind. I hope and pray that you all would also believe in the Truth that Jesus is the true God and Savior.

### **John's Confession of Faith— “*Jesus Is the True God and Eternal Life*” (1 John 5:20)**

We must have the same faith as the one that the Apostle John had. All of us, in other words, must know and have the same faith that believes



in Jesus as our true God and the Lord who has given us the gospel of the water and the Spirit. Put differently, we must know and believe properly that Jesus is our God, and that He is the One who gives us eternal life. Jesus Christ is the very God who has blotted out our sins with the gospel of the water and the Spirit. We must make such true confession of faith.

The Apostle John, too, believed in Jesus Christ as the true God, and he also testified that by believing in the gospel of the water and the Spirit given by Him, he had washed away all his sins, as well as being saved from all the condemnation of his sins.

For us, Jesus Christ is truthfully God Himself, the true Savior, and our true Advocate. Therefore, we must not turn into those who, not realizing that Jesus is God, do not believe but doubt His work; instead, we must have the kind

of faith that knows and believes that Jesus Christ is fundamentally divine, and because He is God, He has saved us from all the sins of the world through the gospel of the water and the Spirit.

In today's Scripture passage, the Apostle John says, "*And if anyone sins, we have an Advocate with the Father, Jesus Christ the righteous*" (1 John 2:1). If anyone says of Jesus the true God, "Jesus is not God. I don't know Him as God. Nor do I know the Truth that has saved people through the water and the Spirit," he must learn about Jesus Christ all over again properly and believe again. Jesus Christ is the true Savior who advocates to God the Father on our behalf that He has washed away all our sins with the gospel of the water and the Spirit, and has saved us from the sins of the world. Jesus Christ is our God and our true Advocate.



## **Jesus Christ Became the Propitiation between God and Us**

In the Bible, the common element in peace offerings, sin offerings, and burnt offerings is that sin was passed onto the sacrificial offering with the laying of hands on its head. In the Old Testament, the Israelites passed their sins onto their sacrificial animal by laying their hands on its head, killed it, drew its blood, put this blood on the four horns of the altar of burnt offering, and offered its flesh and fat to God by burning them with fire.

Just like this, Jesus Christ Himself became our perfect propitiation by being baptized by John the Baptist and shedding His blood. For God to restore peace between Him and us, who had turned into His enemies because of our sins, God Himself had to come to save us, and when He came, He had to take upon our sins by being

baptized and die on the Cross by shedding His precious blood. By doing these things, He had to remove all our sins that had caused us to become enemies to God, restore peace, and make us one with Him once again.

Who can do this work? It is none other than Jesus Christ our God. For all of us, Jesus is God Himself, and this God is our own Advocate. Only this divine Christ could do the works that save us from our sins.

In Revelation 5, there comes the Lamb of God who is worthy to open the seven seals of the scroll. Who is the Lamb here? Jesus Christ our God is this very Lamb who had been slain before on this earth, but who has now been raised again before God the Father. God the Father tells us that this divine Jesus Christ is the only One who can open the seals of His seven plans designed for mankind and will fulfill everything. Who is this divine Jesus Christ? He is the God of the



entire universe, and the Advocate of all those who believe in the gospel of the water and the Spirit.

## **Jesus Christ Has Become Your True Advocate**

1 John 2:1-2 state, *“And if anyone sins, we have an Advocate with the Father, Jesus Christ the righteous. And He Himself is the propitiation for our sins, and not for ours only but also for the whole world.”* Who is our Helper? It is Jesus Christ our true God. It is Jesus Christ who has helped us to be saved from all our sins.

This Jesus Christ, God Himself, is also the Advocate of all sinners. He advocates on our behalf, guarantees us to be born again for our behalf, and by being baptized, crucified, and resurrected in our place, He has saved all His

believers from their death. He who did these things for us is God Himself, and this God is none other than Jesus Christ. He who testified on our behalf that we have become sinless and God’s own people through the gospel of the water and the Spirit is also this very Jesus Christ.

The divine Jesus Christ is our true Advocate. Jesus Christ is the One who has saved us, the One who suffered in our place, the One who sacrificed Himself on our behalf, and the One who has given us the right and glory to become God’s own children. It is this divine Jesus Christ who is the true God and our Advocate who always helps us.

## **We Shouldn’t Restrict Jesus Only as the Small Baby Jesus**

Whenever we pray to God, it is in the name of



Jesus Christ that we pray. Yet we see that some people pray in the name of the Virgin Mary, instead of praying in the name of Jesus Christ. If you visit Catholic churches, you can easily find many icons of Mary holding the baby Jesus in her arms. They pray not in the name of Jesus but in the name of Mary, asking her to supplicate to God on their behalf. But this is a fallacious belief that humiliates Jesus Christ our God. By raising such doctrinal issues here, I am not just trying to denounce the Catholic Church. I just want to let you know that if we have such a fundamentally restricted image of Jesus as only a baby, this is committing the sin of debasing Jesus Christ our God.

What I am trying to tell you is that all of us must realize that the divine Jesus is the God of each and every one of us, and that this God had only borrowed and used Mary's body, to be the Lamb of God, for a short while. You must not be

mistaken to think that Mary is somehow God the Father's wife. Far from it, our Father had used Mary only as an instrument of His work of salvation—that is, the work that Jesus Christ our God fulfilled to save us from our sins once for all by coming to this earth incarnated in the flesh of man, taking upon the sins of the world by being baptized by John the Baptist, dying on the Cross, and rising from the death, all in order to deliver sinners from all the sins of this world. Therefore, to exalt Mary higher than Jesus Christ our God is to commit an utterly blasphemous sin. Mary, a mere human being, is not someone who is greater than God, but only His creation.

Just as Mary had received grace from God in the Bible, for you and I also, it is by believing in the gospel of the water and the Spirit that we have received the grace of salvation from Jesus Christ our true God. And just as Mary was used as God's instrument for a short while, we, too,



have been saved by God and are used as God's instruments for the salvation of other souls. This Mary who was used as God's instrument did not somehow become the spiritual mother of Jesus. It is because people do not know Jesus in their hearts and do not understand the gospel of the water and the Spirit, the real Truth of salvation, that they entertain such fallacious thoughts, trying to fit Jesus into their own thoughts of the flesh according to their own carnal logic.

Far from Mary, it is this divine Jesus who is our Advocate. In other words, Jesus our Advocate is our Helper. When we had fallen into sin, Jesus Christ our God helped us, saving us from our sins and becoming our own Savior. Because this Jesus Christ is God for us, He had truly become our Savior.

The reason why I am preaching 1 John to you is because I must feed you, the spiritual children who have been born again by believing in the

gospel of the water and the Spirit, with the true bread of life. It is because you will face spiritual death if you are not fed with the bread of the gospel of the water and the Spirit that our God Jesus Christ has given you. Throughout the entire world now, many Christians who profess to believe in Jesus still remain ignorant of the gospel of the water and the Spirit. This is all the more reason why we have to continue to provide the world with the true spiritual food to nourish its souls.

For everyone, if he comes to know and believe that Jesus is God Himself, it is only a matter of course that he would come to also believe that Jesus has perfectly delivered us from all our sins with the gospel of the water and the Spirit. When someone comes to believe in Jesus as the true God, then he can easily believe in Him as his Savior who was baptized and crucified to blot out all his sins without any exception.



All of us must believe this, for the divine Jesus is the very God who has given us the true remission of our sins. There are countless people in this world now, and they commit all kinds of sin. Our Lord is the Advocate who has saved us from all these sins. Jesus has atoned all our sins and become our true Savior. No matter what kind of sin we might commit, if only we do not commit the sin of not believing that Jesus is God, and that He has saved us by coming to this earth, being baptized, shedding His blood on the Cross, and rising from the dead again—and if we believe in this Truth—then we will all receive eternal life. Even as you commit all kinds of sin, Jesus has become your Advocate who already took away all your sins. This true God Jesus Christ is the Advocate of all those who believe in the gospel of the water and the Spirit.

## **Someone May Think, “Jesus Has Blotted out All Sins Except This One of Mine.”**

In their own subjective thoughts, such people are liable to think mistakenly that some sins cannot be remitted away. But this is a flawed notion. We need to know Jesus properly as our true God. And we need to know that to save us from our sins, He came to this earth incarnated in the flesh of man, took upon all our sins by being baptized by John the Baptist, was condemned for all these sins of ours by shouldering the sins of the world and bleeding to death on the Cross, and has become our true God by rising from the dead again.

Therefore, if we do not commit the sin of not believing that the divine Jesus has become our true Savior, then all of us can be saved from all



our sins, no matter what kind. If you believe that Jesus is God, then you must realize that the Lord has remitted away all and any sins that you might have committed. This is why He is our Advocate and the God who has saved from all the sins of the world.

The Apostle John clearly stated, *“He Himself is the propitiation for our sins, and not for ours only but also for the whole world”* (1 John 2:2). Jesus our God, in other words, has blotted out all the sins that everyone in this world is committing even as we speak now, and by doing so, our Lord has saved us all. It is because Jesus is God in His essence that He has saved us by accepting all the sins of the world once for all through His baptism received from John the Baptist, shouldering them on His own body, shedding His blood on the Cross and dying, and rising from the dead again. It is by believing in this divine Jesus Christ that I myself could be delivered

from all my sins.

The Apostle John is also addressing this issue. Like John, I, too, am bearing witness of Jesus Christ our God, testifying the fundamental faith, about the gospel of the water and the Spirit. Many Christians, trapped in fallacious doctrines, now remain far removed from the only Truth. But I am content in my heart, thanks to my faith in the divine Jesus Christ and the gospel of the water and the Spirit that He has given me. My hearts is at peace because I believe in the works of salvation fulfilled by the Lord.

What about you then? Have your sins disappeared from your hearts, and are your hearts also at peace, thanks to the faith that you now have? If this is not the case, then your hearts should also be at peace now by believing in Jesus Christ our God and the gospel of the water and the Spirit that He has given you. By being baptized, shedding His blood, and rising from the



dead again, Jesus Christ, God Himself, has saved all of us from all our sins.

Hasn't this divine Jesus truly saved us? Jesus Christ our true God has truly saved us from our sins. Who is this Savior? It is Jesus Christ. Who is Jesus Christ for all of us? He is God Himself. Who, then, is this true God Jesus Christ? He is the Creator and the Redeemer of mankind. We must all believe that Jesus Christ is our own Savior and our God.

Through the gospel of the water, the blood, and the Spirit, this true God Jesus Christ has saved us from all our sins once for all. The divine Jesus Christ has given us the gospel Word of the water and the Spirit, so that we may believe in Him as our Savior. He has guaranteed us this Truth with His divinity, so that we may believe. He has helped us through the gospel of the water and the Spirit, so that we may be delivered from our sins. He actually fulfilled all the works of

salvation. Jesus Christ our God is indeed the true God who has brought salvation to us.

## **If Anyone Believes in the Love of God, It Is Only Natural For Him to Believe in the Gospel of the Water and the Spirit That the Lord Has Given Us**

You must come to believe in this Truth, that Jesus Christ, God Himself, came to this earth, was baptized by John, shed His blood, and has thereby blotted out all the sins of the world. I, for one, believe in everything that the divine Jesus Christ did for us. I can believe in this Truth—that Jesus is God; that to save us from the sins of the world, He was born unto this earth through the body of the Virgin Mary and took upon the sins



of the world by being baptized; that to fulfill the Word that declares, “*The wages of sin is death*” (*Romans 6:23*), He was vicariously condemned in our place for our sins by being crucified; that He rose from the dead again; that He now lives forever; and that He has, by doing all these things for us, become our own Savior.

Can you also believe in this Truth with your hearts? Can you also believe that Jesus Christ is the Advocate for us, and that He has become our very own Helper?

The divine Jesus Christ is the One who helps us. Whenever we succumb to our weaknesses and fall into sin, Jesus Christ our God alone comes to our rescue and helps us. He is the One who alone has saved us entirely, the One who bore all our sins on His own body and was vicariously condemned in our place. This is why I am always thankful to Jesus Christ our God. And this is why I am always testifying Him.

## **I Am So Relieved and Thankful That Jesus Christ Has Become Our Own Advocate**

For those who believe in the gospel of the water and the Spirit, Jesus Christ, God Himself, has become their Advocate who is always helping them, and He took care of all their sins for all times to come. By also taking care of all the condemnation of all our sins, this divine Jesus Christ has saved us from them.

Those who know the gospel Truth of the water and the Spirit must know as well that Jesus is God. We must all realize that as far as we are concerned, Jesus Christ the true God has become our own Advocate who always helps us. And, whenever we fall short, we must believe in this Truth, that Jesus Christ our God has blotted out all our sins by being baptized and shedding His



blood.

Jesus Christ our God has truly become the Advocate for all of us. “Yes, though you are weak like this, I bore even those sins as well, didn’t I?” Isn’t this what Jesus Christ our God is saying to us? He is indeed telling us that He already took away all our sins, and He is teaching us, comforting us, and encouraging us, all through the gospel of the water and the Spirit. Isn’t this the case?

People throughout the whole world who now believe in the gospel of the water and the Spirit must look toward Jesus Christ our God and believe in Him. It is this Jesus Christ who is always advocating on behalf of all such believers in the gospel of the water and the Spirit, encouraging them, patting them on their shoulders, and giving them new strength to go on.

Nonetheless, the believers in the gospel of the

water and the Spirit, who are spread throughout the world, are now saying, “I can’t find God’s Church in my area. What should I do?”

I would like to make this clear to all of you: “You, the brothers and sisters who have been saved from all your sins by believing in Jesus Christ our God and the gospel of the water and the Spirit, must establish God’s Church and lead the souls there.” I am not saying here that you should first begin by building a church building. Far from it, I believe that you should take your own homes as the place of worship, testify Jesus Christ our God, preach the gospel of the water and the Spirit that He has given us by faith, share with others the gospel books that we have sent you, and thereby turn around many souls back to the arms of Jesus Christ.

To do so, you should continue to receive and read our books that contain spiritual truths, talk over your spiritual problems with us through the



Internet, and just follow our steps one by one. You have nothing to fear about what will happen to you. Jesus Christ, God Himself, is advocating on your behalf, defending you from your weaknesses and helping you in every step. It is my hope and prayer for you that through Jesus Christ, you would be able to establish God's Church there, that the countless souls would receive the remission of sin through your Church, and that you would join us in this precious mission of preaching the gospel of the water and the Spirit all over the world.

## **Jesus Is Truly Our Help**

It is when I have fallen into the world deeply, when the spiritual strength in me is weakened, that I have a profound appreciation of the fact that the Lord has become my Advocate. In such

times, when I come to God's Church and hear His Word, when I praise Him, when I pray to Him, and when I surround myself in this spiritual atmosphere of the gathering of the believers in the gospel of the water and the Spirit, I come to have the first-hand experience that Jesus Christ comforts my heart once again, encourages me, and gives me new strength. I can appreciate in times like these that Jesus our God is advocating on our behalf for all things. Whenever we gather together in the Truth, the Holy Spirit works among us forcefully, and fills our hearts in full. This is why the gathering of God's Church is so important, as it is written in the Bible, "*Not forsaking the assembling of ourselves together, as is the manner of some, but exhorting one another, and so much the more as you see the Day approaching*" (Hebrews 10:25).

Jesus Christ is the God who gives new strength to those who believe in the gospel of the



water and the Spirit, washes their soiled hearts, makes their hearts clean once again, gives faith, holds them and helps them. This divine Jesus Christ is none other than God Himself for all of us. You receive such help when you come into God's Church. And the Holy Spirit Himself comforts your hearts, consoles you, re-establishes your faith on firm ground once again, gives you understanding, and renews you.

If you are believers in the gospel of the water and the Spirit, you definitely would have experienced this. God's Church is run by the Holy Spirit, though unseen by our eyes. So as we come to God's Church and worship Him together, the Holy Spirit makes us feel uncomfortable when there is something wrong in our hearts, and when there is something wrong in our knowledge, He enables us to correct it. God helps us in many aspects and ways. This is, when our gathering is over, how we come to receive

new strength to resume our work even more vigorously. We come to be helped by God like this: Through our worship and fellowship, we are experiencing the fullness of the Holy Spirit, and the real existence of the love of Jesus Christ, who is the true God.

## **It Is the Believers in the Gospel of the Water and the Spirit Who Are the Living Christians**

Jesus Christ our God exists as the One who helps us like this. Because He is God for us, in this age and time, through God's Church and through you, He can wash away everyone's sins with the gospel of the water and the Spirit. This is what the Apostle John is telling us, and even now, at this very moment, this is how God is



working in us, His Church.

So if anyone who has received the remission of his sins does not abide in God's Church and does not hear the Word of God, he is bound to fall into the world and drift away afar, as a child who ran away from his home. If Jesus Christ our God does not keep our hearts diligently, then we will end up drifting away so far that we would not be able to return to God's Church even if we want to.

However, even if your faith in Jesus Christ is not so great, when you just keep coming to God's Church, hearing His Word, worshipping Him, and praising in union with your church members, then you will experience that the divine Jesus Christ indeed heals your hearts from all your mistakes and wounds, and makes your hearts perfect once again. So it is by giving thanks to Jesus Christ our God and being helped by Him that we carry on with our lives of faith.

No one may say anything particular comforting to us, but we are still comforted and helped greatly. We do actually receive such comfort and help. Those who believe in the gospel of the water and the Spirit can actually feel the divine Jesus Christ with their hearts through their churches. It is my hope and prayer that all of you, our partners and saints throughout the world who are working with us, would now gather together there as God's Church where you can keep your spiritual lives and strengthen your faith by the help of our Lord Jesus, the true God.

On the other hand, those who do not believe in the gospel of the water and the Spirit can never do God's work with us. None of them, no matter how well educated and smart, can stand here and preach to the righteous. Not just anyone can sit where we sit and preach the Word or be helped by Christ in His Church. It is only because we believe in the divine Jesus Christ and the gospel



of the water and the Spirit that we can become His own children and the members of His Church.

Now, the Apostle John is saying to all those who have received the remission of their sins from Jesus Christ our God to love one another, and that only then they can keep God's commandments. As it is written in 1 John 2:5, *“But whoever keeps His word, truly the love of God is perfected in him. By this we know that we are in Him.”*

Here, the phrase “whoever keeps His word” does not mean keeping His Word as if one were keeping the Law, but it means to believe in His Word. Just as Moses had smashed the two stone tablets of the Law before the people of Israel when he came down from the mountain, we are such that we just cannot keep the Law of God but disobey it and break it. So, the Bible declares, *“For as many as are of the works of the law are*

*under the curse; for it is written, ‘Cursed is everyone who does not continue in all things which are written in the book of the law, to do them’” (Galatians 3:10).*

We cannot keep any single clause of His commandments. However, there is one thing that Jesus Christ our God enables us to keep, and this is none other than the gospel Word of the water and the Spirit. Our faith in the gospel of the water and the Spirit is the foundation of all our faith in God's Word. In other words, if we do not have faith in this true gospel, all our faith in His Word must then be fraudulent. Therefore, the Apostle Paul said, *“For in it [the gospel] the righteousness of God is revealed from faith to faith; as it is written, ‘The just shall live by faith’” (Romans 1:17).*

For us who believe in His Word, God washes away our sins with the gospel of the water and the Spirit, saves us from our condemnation of



sin, helps us, makes us His children, heals us always, clothes us in His grace, leads us, and glorifies us. This passage tells us that God is found in those who believe in Jesus as He is. They are the ones who “keep His word.” It is because we the born-again are the ones who believe in the divine Jesus as their Savior that God protects our faith. If we believe in Jesus as the true God with our hearts, God will keep us, but if do not believe in Jesus Christ with such faith, then God cannot keep us.

Yet many people do not understand what the Apostle John is trying to say in this passage. I believe that God is in the hearts of all those who believe in the gospel of the water and the Spirit, and that He makes our faith in His Word even stronger day by day. For those who actually believe in the gospel of the water and the Spirit, God allows the remission of sin and the dwelling of the Holy Spirit in our hearts. And Jesus the

true God forever advocates on their behalf, comforts them, encourages them, blesses them, and protects them at all times. In all those who believe in this divine Jesus Christ as the Savior, God the Father dwells. In the hearts of those who believe in the gospel of the water and the Spirit, and in their Church, God is always with them. This is what the Apostle John is now telling us here.

This passage that the Apostle John spoke has been fulfilled to us today. Though we had found it difficult to speak of such faith before we were born again, now we are able to spread it to others. We have become the main protagonists of today’s Scripture passage. All the promises of the Bible are for no one else but you and me.

I thank God for the fact that this Word that He spoke in 1 John 2:1-5 has been fulfilled to all of us who believe in the gospel of the water and the Spirit. I am very thankful to the Lord Jesus that



He has become the Savior and Pastor of all the believers in the gospel of the water and the Spirit, and that He forever helps them as their true Advocate.

When God helps them, He does so through His Church. Therefore, I admonish you, the co-workers of our mission, to visit our web site frequently and continue to receive new spiritual bread from us, and to keep in touch with us so that we may lead you to the right path.

Please, pray God for us that we could continue to carry on with our ministry, translating our gospel books into many more languages and making them available to all who seek the Truth. Amen. ☒



# **CHAPTER 2**

---

## **SERMON 2**

**(1 John 2:1-17)**

**“Our Lord Who Has  
Become Our Advocate”**



Contents



## **Our Lord Who Has Become Our Advocate**

**< 1 John 2:1-17 >**

**“My little children, these things I write to you, so that you may not sin. And if anyone sins, we have an Advocate with the Father, Jesus Christ the righteous. And He Himself is the propitiation for our sins, and not for ours only but also for the whole world. Now by this we know that we know Him, if we keep His commandments. He who says, ‘I know Him,’ and does not keep His commandments, is a liar, and the truth is not in him. But whoever keeps His word, truly the love of God is perfected in him. By this we know that we are in Him. He who says he abides in Him ought himself also to walk just as He walked.**

**Brethren, I write no new commandment to you, but an old commandment which you have had from the beginning. The old commandment is the word which you heard from the beginning. Again, a new commandment I write to you, which thing is true in Him and in you, because the darkness is passing away, and the true light is already shining. He who says he is in the light, and hates his brother, is in darkness until now. He who loves his brother abides in the light, and there is no cause for stumbling in him. But he who hates his brother is in darkness and walks in darkness, and does not know where he is going, because the darkness has blinded his eyes.**

**I write to you, little children,**

**Because your sins are forgiven you for His name’s sake.**

**I write to you, fathers,**



**Because you have known Him who is from the beginning.**

**I write to you, young men,**

**Because you have overcome the wicked one.**

**I write to you, little children,**

**Because you have known the Father.**

**I have written to you, fathers,**

**Because you have known Him who is from the beginning.**

**I have written to you, young men,**

**Because you are strong, and the word of God abides in you,**

**And you have overcome the wicked one.**

**Do not love the world or the things in the world. If anyone loves the world, the love of the Father is not in him. For all that is in the world—the lust of the flesh, the lust of the eyes, and the pride of life—is not of the Father but is of the world. And the world is passing away, and the lust of it; but he who does the**

**will of God abides forever.”**

## **Who Has Become Our Advocate?**

In the Old Testament, when a sinner brought a sacrificial animal to offer to God, he had to believe that while it was he who had to die for his sins, his sacrificial offering instead accepted his sins with the laying on of his hands and bled to death for his sins on his behalf. All those who are to have this faith must believe with their hearts that God has remitted away all their sins according to the sacrificial system of the Tabernacle—that is, by passing all their sins onto their offerings of sacrifice and drawing the animals' blood.

This sacrificial system was a shadow of the good things to come (Hebrews 10:1). Here, the phrase “the good things to come” implies the



righteous deeds of Jesus Christ, namely, His salvation of the water and the Spirit. Do you also want to really believe in the true gospel of the water and the Spirit with your hearts? My fellow believers, when we come before God and stand before His presence, we must have received the washing of our sins by knowing and believing in the law of salvation that has saved us from all our sins and took them away. We must also know and believe with our hearts that this salvation of the washing of sin is entirely the mercy of God and His love, and it is with this knowledge and faith that we must stand before God.

As the only way and faith for all of us to be saved from all our sins, we must believe that Jesus Christ is the Son of God, and that by coming to this earth, being baptized by John the Baptist and thus taking upon the sins of the world, and dying on the Cross and rising from

the dead again, He has indeed perfectly saved us from all our sins, condemnation and death. It is ultimately by believing in the gospel of the water and the Spirit that we have received the remission of our sins. By coming to this earth, being baptized, and shedding His blood on the Cross, Jesus Christ has completely blotted out all our sins once for all.

Hebrews 10:11-13 states, *“And every priest stands ministering daily and offering repeatedly the same sacrifices, which can never take away sins. But this Man, after He had offered one sacrifice for sins forever, sat down at the right hand of God, from that time waiting till His enemies are made His footstool.”* My dear fellow believers, Jesus Christ has at once blotted out the sins of mankind, including all your sins, by coming to this earth, being baptized, and shedding His blood. He blotted out not only the sins that you and I have committed ever since we



were born and will commit until the day we die, but He also blotted out all the sins of our descendants once and for all.

Jesus Christ is the One who took upon our sins and died for us, the One who offered the sacrifice of salvation. By thus giving the everlasting sin offering with His baptism and the Cross, Jesus has forever completed our salvation. You can receive the washing of your sins only when you believe that Jesus Christ has forever blotted out all our sins with the gospel of the water and the Spirit once for all. Do believe. You will then receive the everlasting remission of your sins. And receive eternal life.

Therefore, it is critically important for us to realize that it is by believing in Jesus Christ, the Host of the gospel of the water and the Spirit, that we can receive the everlasting remission of sin. Those who believe in the baptism that the Messiah received and the blood that He shed on

the Cross as their own remission of sin have indeed been forever remitted from all their sins once for all.

But those who do not believe in this gospel Truth will surely face the condemnation of their sins when God's judgment day arrives. God is leaving them alone for now, but when the Day of Judgment comes, everyone who has sin will absolutely be condemned and suffer eternally. Those who have received the remission of their sins by believing in the gospel of the water and the Spirit, in contrast, will be able to partake in the glory of the Kingdom of God.

## **In Which Book Are Your Names Written Now?**

Revelation 20:12-15 tell us that those who have sin in their hearts have their names written



in the Books of Deeds, while those who have received the remission of their sins by faith and thus are sinless have their names written in the Book of Life. Because everyone is born as a sinner, everyone's name is automatically written in the Books of Deeds; however, thanks to the Lord who has remitted away our sins, the believers' names have been blotted out from the Books of Deeds and are instead now written in the Book of Life.

This passage also says that those whose names are written in the Books of Deeds are the ones who have sin in their consciences, and therefore He will cast them all into the everlasting fire (Revelation 20:15). This is the very judgment of the second death that awaits every sinner. This judgment of the second death is the judgment of sin, the condemnation that casts sinners into the pit of fire to live there forever.

Those whose names are written in the Book of

life, on the other hand, are the ones who believe that God has truthfully saved them from all their sins. They are the ones who believe in God's salvation woven of blue, purple, and scarlet thread and fine woven linen, and who have, by their faith, entered into the gate of the Tabernacle, the gate of Heaven. Our Lord has bestowed the great blessings of salvation on those who have truly received the remission of their consciences' sins by believing in the gospel of the water and the Spirit. These people whose sins God has remitted away are the ones who know how Jesus Christ has blotted out all the sins of their entire lifetime, and believe in this. It is because of this faith of ours that God has allowed us to receive from Him the everlasting remission of our sins.

This is written in Hebrews 10:19-22, *“Therefore, brethren, having boldness to enter the Holiest by the blood of Jesus, by a new and*



*living way which He consecrated for us, through the veil, that is, His flesh, and having a High Priest over the house of God, let us draw near with a true heart in full assurance of faith, having our hearts sprinkled from an evil conscience and our bodies washed with pure water.*” By the baptism and blood of Jesus, we have received this boldness to enter into the Holiest. Jesus Christ could shed His blood only because He had first taken upon the sins of the world by being baptized by John (Matthew 3:15).

Here, the writer of Hebrews said, *“And having a High Priest over the house of God, let us draw near with a true heart in full assurance of faith, having our hearts sprinkled from an evil conscience and our bodies washed with pure water.”*

To blot out the sins of mankind, Jesus Christ forsook the glorious throne of God and came to this earth. Just as God had promised through the

Prophet Isaiah, after about 700 years went by since Isaiah had so prophesied, Jesus was indeed born unto this earth through the body of the Virgin Mary. The Messiah Himself came to this earth incarnated in the flesh of man and took upon our sins through His baptism in the Jordan River.

Why did Jesus the true God have to be baptized by a man, John the Baptist? This question has been a mystery to every truth seeker for ages. However, thanks to the Lord, He has *“made known to us the mystery of His will, according to His good pleasure which He purposed in Himself”* (Ephesians 1:9). The Lord has made us to realize the meaning of His baptism that constitutes the gospel of the water and the Spirit, the original gospel that His Apostles received and preached.

When it says here, *“having a High Priest over the house of God,”* this High Priest refers to



Jesus Christ. Jesus Christ is the High Priest of the Kingdom of Heaven, and the role of the earthly High Priest was fulfilled by John the Baptist. Why did God need to set aside a man called John, who was the greatest of all those born of women? This was done so that Jesus would be baptized by John the Baptist. To save us from our sins, in other words, God Himself as the heavenly High Priest lowered His head to John the Baptist, the representative of all mankind (Matthew 11:11), and received the baptism through which He accepted the sins of the world.

It was to bear our sins that Jesus Christ laid down His body as our own offering of sacrifice and was baptized by John the Baptist. Jesus Christ was offered to God the Father as our propitiation. Referring to this, Hebrews says that “our hearts” have been “*sprinkled from an evil conscience and our bodies washed with pure water*” (Hebrews 10:22).

The passage also says, therefore, “*Let us draw near with a true heart in full assurance of faith*” (Hebrews 10:22). It is telling us that those who have realized that they are piles of sin have been sprinkled from an evil conscience and washed their bodies with pure water. This “pure water” refers to the baptism that Jesus received (1 Peter 3:21).

Do you know just how many sins you commit throughout your entire lifetime? Human beings are born with sin from their mothers’ wombs, and are bound to live their entire lifetime committing sins until the day they die. Everyone, in other words, is born with over a dozen of sinful minds: Evil thoughts, adulteries, fornications, murders, thefts, covetousness, wickedness, deceit, lewdness, an evil eye, blasphemy, pride, and foolishness (Mark 7:20-22). And they sin throughout their entire lifetime with both their bodies and hearts. Because they



are always insufficient, they commit these various kinds of sin without ceasing. They come to realize that the sins that they committed today will be committed again tomorrow, and the sins that they committed this year will once again be committed the next year. Like this, we are such beings that are bound to continue to sin time after time until the day we die.

However, the writer of Hebrews says here that we have washed our bodies with pure water. This means that by personally being baptized by John, Jesus Christ has washed away all our sins. When were our sins actually passed onto Jesus and washed away? It was when Jesus Christ was baptized by John. But on our side, our sins were all cleansed away by believing in this Truth from the center of our hearts. We believe this because Jesus Christ became our own sacrificial offering by being baptized and shedding His blood.

***“Permit It to Be So Now, for Thus It Is Fitting for Us to Fulfill All Righteousness” (Matthew 3:15)***

Let us turn to Matthew 1:21-23: “*‘And she will bring forth a Son, and you shall call His name JESUS, for He will save His people from their sins.’ So all this was done that it might be fulfilled which was spoken by the Lord through the prophet, saying: ‘Behold, the virgin shall be with child, and bear a Son, and they shall call His name Immanuel,’ which is translated, ‘God with us.’”*

To save His people from their sins, God Himself was incarnated in the flesh of man and born unto this earth through the body of the Virgin Mary. God had promised this about 700 years ago through the Prophet Isaiah, that He would send us the Messiah: “*Behold, the virgin*



*shall be with child, and bear a Son, and they shall call His name Immanuel.”*

The name ‘Immanuel’ here means that God is with us. To be with us, then, what must God do? He has to come to us as a Man. Why did He come to us as a Man? He did so because He had to take upon all our sins once and for all. It is because Jesus Christ, God Himself, had to take upon our sins that He was born unto this earth in the flesh of man through the body of the Virgin Mary. And Jesus remained quiet until the age of 29, but the next year, when He turned 30, He revealed Himself.

When, then, were all our sins passed onto Jesus Christ? For this, let us specifically turn to Matthew 3:13-17 here: *“Then Jesus came from Galilee to John at the Jordan to be baptized by him. And John tried to prevent Him, saying, ‘I need to be baptized by You, and are You coming to me?’ But Jesus answered and said to him,*

*‘Permit it to be so now, for thus it is fitting for us to fulfill all righteousness.’ Then he allowed Him. When He had been baptized, Jesus came up immediately from the water; and behold, the heavens were opened to Him, and He saw the Spirit of God descending like a dove and alighting upon Him. And suddenly a voice came from heaven, saying, ‘This is My beloved Son, in whom I am well pleased.’”*

## **The Reason Why Jesus Was Baptized by John the Baptist**

Here, Matthew 3:13 says, *“Then Jesus came from Galilee to John at the Jordan to be baptized by him. And John tried to prevent Him, saying, ‘I need to be baptized by You, and are You coming to me?’”* The John here refers to John the Baptist. This John was born in the house of



Aaron the High Priest of the Old Testament as his descendant, and he was the Old Testament's last High Priest who faithfully fulfilled all his duty when Jesus came (Luke 1:5, 76-77).

You probably remember that in the Old Testament, Aaron the High Priest had laid his hands on the head of a living goat and drew its blood to offer sacrifice on behalf of the people of Israel on the Day of Atonement. God had promised that through the sacrifice that was given according to the sacrificial system, He would accept the offering and blot out the Israelites' sins in turn.

Just as the sacrificial offering of the Old Testament had received the laying on of hands from the High Priest, Jesus, too, came to the Jordan River and took upon the sins of the world by receiving baptism from John, which was performed according to the same manner. Matthew 11:13-14 says, *“For all the prophets*

*and the law prophesied until John. And if you are willing to receive it, he is Elijah who is to come.”*

This passage points out that all the prophecies of the Old Testament's prophets and its promises of God ended with the ministry of John. John's calling was to be completed with the fulfillment of his role—that is, to baptize Jesus and pass the sins of mankind. By thus actually passing the sins of the world, now the age of promise ended, and the age of the Lord's actual salvation began starting from the baptism Jesus received from John.

Who was Elijah? He was one of the greatest prophets of Israel who turned the heart of God to His children and the hearts of the children to their Father God (Malachi 4:5-6). Jesus Christ, the Lamb of God who came to bear the sins of us mankind, accepted the sins of the world by being baptized by John the Baptist, the representative of mankind, the Elijah to come, and a descendant



of the Old Testament's High Priest. As John the Baptist laid his hands on the head of Jesus, all the sins of us mankind were passed onto the body of Jesus Christ once for all.

In other words, the High Priest of Heaven and the representative of the earth met together and gave the everlasting sacrifice of sin offering that would blot out mankind's sins. It is because Jesus the heavenly High Priest was baptized by John the representative of mankind that all the prophecies and promises of the Old Testament were fulfilled. This is why Jesus said here, *"All the prophets and the law prophesied until John."*

Also, saying in Matthew 11:14, *"If you are willing to receive it, he is Elijah who is to come,"* Jesus Himself called John as Elijah. This passage actually had been prophesied in the Old Testament. If we turn to Malachi 4:5-6, we would see this clearly:

*"Behold, I will send you Elijah the prophet*

*Before the coming of the great and dreadful day of the LORD.*

*And he will turn the hearts of the fathers to the children,*

*And the hearts of the children to their fathers, Lest I come and strike the earth with a curse."*

God had promised to send us Elijah, and this Elijah whom He had promised to send is none other than John the Baptist.

Elijah, one of the greatest prophets of the Old Testament, was the quintessential prophet who had turned all the people of Israel back to God. This Elijah was a man who had lived in 9th century B.C. Over 800 years had passed when Jesus said this. How, then, would God send this Elijah? This promise was that God would send someone who would fulfill Elijah's role. Therefore, the passage here was prophesying about John the Baptist.

By baptizing Jesus, John the Baptist turned the



hearts of the entire mankind back to God. In Matthew 11:11-12, Jesus Himself also testified about John the Baptist, *“Assuredly, I say to you, among those born of women there has not risen one greater than John the Baptist; but he who is least in the kingdom of heaven is greater than he. And from the days of John the Baptist until now the kingdom of heaven suffers violence, and the violent take it by force.”*

What does this passage mean? It means that God had promised to forever blot out everyone’s sins, and that according to this promise, He accepted, as the heavenly High Priest, all the sins of all the people through the earthly High Priest. And it proclaims that whoever believes in Jesus’ baptism can now boldly enter Heaven by his faith.

Since it was not possible to forever remit away all our sins once for all with the Old Testament’s blood of lambs and bulls, some other sacrifice

was needed. Yet on this earth, there was no such unblemished sacrificial offering that could completely and forever blot out all our sins; therefore, the sinless Son of God, Jesus Christ, had to come to this earth and become this sacrificial offering Himself. As Jesus Christ thus came to this earth to give the everlasting sin offering for His people, there also had to be a representative of mankind, the High Priest who would pass their sins to Him, the Lamb of God. This is why there had to be John the Baptist, a descendant of Aaron, whom God had prepared for this purpose.

Only Aaron and his descendants, who were the High Priests of the Old Testament, were qualified to offer the sacrifice of the Day of Atonement. As such, God could not just take anyone as the earthly High Priest. So God prepared this representative of mankind from the house of the High Priest; that is, from the



descendants of Aaron. This representative was John the Baptist who was born of Zacharias and Elizabeth six months before Jesus was born. Both parents of John, Zacharias and Elizabeth, were also of the descendants of Aaron.

Therefore, John the Baptist, whose parents were Aaron's descendants, could fulfill his priesthood as the High Priest set by God, and he was the representative of mankind who was truly qualified to pass all their sins to Jesus. Because John the Baptist, the Elijah to come, who would turn the hearts of the children to their fathers, was the earthly High Priest whom God had prepared, he baptized Jesus Christ, who became the sacrificial offering, in a form of the Old Testament's laying on of hands.

John the Baptist baptized Jesus by laying his hands on His head. Jesus was 30 at that time. Aaron's descendants were to start their priesthood from their age 30 (Numbers 4:3). As

John the Baptist baptized Jesus, all the sins of mankind were passed onto Him. Therefore, we no longer need any more sacrifice to blot out our sins (Hebrews 10:18). John the Baptist was the last High Priest of the Old Testament.

God sent John the Baptist, the Elijah to come, and six months later, He also sent His Son Jesus as the sinless and unblemished offering for mankind. By making John give baptism to Jesus and by making Jesus receive this baptism from John, God had passed all our sins onto Jesus. By doing so, the providence and promises of God were all fulfilled. John the Baptist, the earthly High Priest, laid his hands on the head of Jesus, our own sacrificial offering. And receiving this laying on of hands, Jesus went into the water and then reemerged from it. Jesus received the baptism that fulfilled all the righteousness of God.

That Jesus went into water implies His death.



And that He came up again from the water symbolizes His resurrection. And the laying on of hands that Jesus received from John tells us that He accepted all our sins.

That baptism of Jesus that is written in Matthew 3:13-17 was to accept the sins of the world. To take upon our sins, Jesus Christ sought to be baptized by John the Baptist in the Jordan River, where John was baptizing Israelites to repent. At first, John protested, saying, *“I need to be baptized by You, and are You coming to me?”* John the Baptist tried to prevent Jesus from being baptized because he knew that while he was only the High Priest of this earth, Jesus Christ was the High Priest of Heaven, and he could not bear with himself, as a mere man, to dare to lay his hands on God’s own head. But Jesus was able to command Him forcefully, *“Permit it to be so now.”*

Why did the High Priest of Heaven come to

this earth? He came to this earth to forever save us from our sins once for all, not by offering the blood of bulls or goats, but by offering His own body (Hebrews 9:12). By receiving His baptism from John, Jesus accepted all our sins of the world onto His body, and by offering this body of His to God the Father, He has saved us from all our sins. Like this, Jesus accepted all our sins by being baptized, offered His body to God the Father by being crucified, and thereby became our own sacrificial offering for the atonement of all our sins, thus saving us all.

Then, Jesus said firmly to this hesitating John, *“Permit it to be so now, for thus it is fitting for us to fulfill all righteousness.”* John the Baptist then also realized Jesus’ will, and obeyed Him. At last, he laid his hands on the head of the Messiah, and this was the moment when the will of God was properly fulfilled. So, the Bible states, *“When He had been baptized, Jesus came up*



*immediately from the water; and behold, the heavens were opened to Him, and He saw the Spirit of God descending like a dove and alighting upon Him. And suddenly a voice came from heaven, saying, ‘This is My beloved Son, in whom I am well pleased’” (Matthew 3:16-17).*

The word “baptism” means to be washed, to be submerged under water, and to be buried. When sin is passed on, the one who accepted this sin must die. So the one who passed sin is washed from it, and since the one who accepted this sin must die for it, he is to be buried—it is, in other words, as the symbol of this death that Jesus went into the water. John the Baptist, the representative of mankind, Elijah to come and the High Priest, baptized Jesus and thereby passed the sins of the world to Jesus Christ, the Savior who came to this earth to perfectly save everyone from sin.

The spiritual meaning of baptism is the

passing of sin. What, then, is the spiritual meaning of the laying on of hands? The laying on of hands also means to pass on sin, or to transfer sin. Therefore, this laying on of hands of the Old Testament and the baptism of the New Testament are the same. As such, by putting his hands on Jesus’ head, John the Baptist baptized Him to pass over all the sins of the world.

That Jesus took upon all our sins by being baptized was fitting to fulfill all the righteousness of God. What is the meaning of the phrase ‘for thus’ in the passage, “Permit it to be so now, for thus it is fitting for us to fulfill all righteousness”? The word ‘for thus’ is *‘hutos’* in Greek, which means ‘just in this way,’ ‘most fitting,’ or ‘there is no other way besides this.’ This word shows that Jesus irreversibly took the sins of humankind onto Himself through the baptism He received from John. In other words, nothing else was proper to fulfill all the



righteousness of God but this method that entailed John the Baptist, the representative of mankind, to baptize Jesus the Son of God and thereby make Him take upon the sins of us mankind.

It is written, *“For God so loved the world that He gave His only begotten Son, that whoever believes in Him should not perish but have everlasting life” (John 3:16)*. Sending His Son Jesus Christ to this earth, God the Father made Him receive baptism from the representative of mankind in this way. It is because Jesus had accepted all our sins by being baptized that He could carry the sins of the world and die on the Cross. Like this, Jesus was the sacrifice of our everlasting sin offering who has wholly saved us by being baptized and dying on the Cross. This was the providence of God.

This is why Jesus said in John 3:5, *“Unless one is born of water and the Spirit, he cannot*

*enter the kingdom of God.”* It is because Jesus Christ had accepted all our sins by being baptized that He was crucified and shed His blood in our place. The next day of Jesus’ baptism, John the Baptist personally bore witness of Jesus by saying, *“Behold! The Lamb of God who takes away the sin of the world!” (John 1:29)* And Jesus, by carrying the sins of the world to the Cross and being crucified, has saved us from them.

My dear fellow Christians, you and I must believe in this gospel of the water and the Spirit. Jesus Christ accepted all our sins through His baptism, was crucified to death in our place, rose from the dead again in three days, and lives even now and to eternity. You, too, must now believe in Jesus Christ as your God and your Savior.

By accepting all our sins through His baptism and dying on the Cross, Jesus has completely fulfilled the law that declares the wages of sin to



be death. In this way, our Lord has saved you and me from all our sins. This is why God the Father opened the gates of Heaven when His Son was baptized. The Bible says that when Jesus was baptized and came up from the water, the gates of Heaven were opened: *“Behold, the heavens were opened to Him, and He saw the Spirit of God descending like a dove and alighting upon Him. And suddenly a voice came from heaven, saying, ‘This is My beloved Son, in whom I am well pleased’”* (Matthew 3:16-17).

God was pleased that Jesus was baptized. Our God the Father fulfilled salvation through His Son. Taking His own Son as the sacrificial offering for our sins, He made Him bear all our sins and our condemnation, and has thereby saved the entire mankind. In order to save mankind from all their sins exactly according to how he had promised in the Old Testament, God the Father has fulfilled His righteousness exactly

according to His promised way.

In today’s scripture passage, the Apostle John says, *“My little children, these things I write to you, so that you may not sin. And if anyone sins, we have an Advocate with the Father, Jesus Christ the righteous. And He Himself is the propitiation for our sins, and not for ours only but also for the whole world”* (1 John 2:1-2).

We have to recognize that John is talking of the gospel of the water and the Spirit by this passage. In other words, Jesus has blotted out all the sins of the world. Who became the propitiation for the whole world? Jesus Christ is the Lord who, to blot out the sins of the world, was baptized by John the Baptist, and thereby took upon all the sins of the whole world and has washed away them away once for all. What the Apostle John is saying here, therefore, is not that we are forgiven from our sins on a daily basis every time we sin in this world and whenever we



say prayers of repentance, but that Jesus Christ has remitted away all our sins once for all through the gospel of the water and the Spirit.

*Who is our Advocate?*

*Only Jesus Christ who has delivered us from the sins of the world is our Advocate.*

The passage is telling us, in other words, that if anyone in this world sins, we have Jesus Christ as our Advocate before the Father. The “Advocate” here refers to our Lord, implying that Jesus Christ speaks to the Father in our defense regarding our sins. Jesus Christ is the Savior who has perfectly saved us from all the sins of the world. This is why when any believer in the gospel of the water and the Spirit sins,

Jesus Christ who has become our Savior speaks to God the Father and to even to us in his defense, saying, “To blot out all his sins, I was baptized by John the Baptist. Therefore, he is not guilty, Father, for he believes in the gospel of the water and the Spirit.... You, my child, do not be afraid of your sins you have committed these days. Don’t you know that all these sins were also washed away through My baptism and bloodshed on the Cross? Just admit and confess them before God, and have confidence in the gospel of the water and the Spirit and ruminate on it again.”

*What is true confession?*

*It is to confess our daily sins by placing our faith in the gospel of the water and the Spirit.*



This passage tells us that after believing in the gospel Word of the water and the Spirit, if we once again commit sins before God, then we need to confess these sins to Jesus Christ and to believe that the Lord took away even these sins. What we need to realize clearly here is that it is not because of our deed of confession itself that our sins are blotted out. Rather, it is because our Lord took upon our personal sins through the baptism that He received that these personal transgressions of ours are solved away by our faith. This is because when our Lord came to this earth and was baptized by John the Baptist, He had already taken upon all the sins of the world once for all. And because He already bore the condemnation of our sins on the Cross, all that we have to do is confess them by believing in the gospel of the water and the Spirit.

As such, by thus believing that our Lord took away all the sins that we have ever committed

and will ever commit throughout our entire lifetime on this earth, we are saved from all our sins and freed from our guilt. What the Apostle John is telling us here is that he wants us, in Jesus Christ, to never be bound by sin again. This is why Jesus Christ Himself became the propitiation for our sins before God the Father.

The Apostle John, in other words, is admonishing us to dwell in the perfect gospel and live a perfect life by faith. Only then can we really live the true life of faith. It is when we know this Truth that we could have washed all our sins only in the Lord, and that we will never again be bound by our weaknesses and we can become God's workers. In other words, by believing in the gospel of the water and the Spirit, we are no longer under condemnation, and this is what makes it possible for us to make the true confession of faith that enables us to call Jesus Christ as our true Savior. Why? Because by

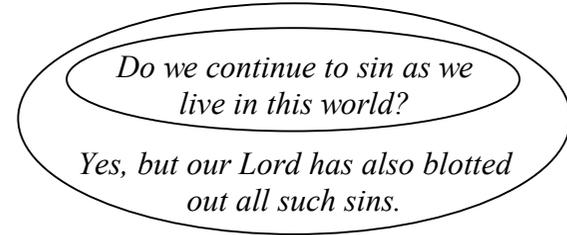


believing in the true gospel in our hearts, all of us can now boldly come before the Holy God.

Those who believe in the gospel of the water and the Spirit, the true gospel that our Lord has given us, have been delivered from all the sins that they have committed once for all by faith. It is only by believing in this perfect gospel that we have been perfectly saved from all these sins that we commit throughout our entire lifetime. The true gospel that has brought to us our salvation from all the sins of the world is that when our Lord came to this earth and was baptized, He already took the sins of the world upon His own body. Faith in this Truth is to believe that the Lord has saved us from all our sins once for all. Only by believing in this gospel of the water and the Spirit can we be saved.

However, all of us still continue to sin again as we live on in this world. This is because everyone has flesh, and is therefore always

insufficient. However, we cannot become sinners again. It is because Jesus Christ, who has blotted out all our sins and become our Advocate, is still on our side that those of us who believe in the gospel of the water and the Spirit will always remain whole.

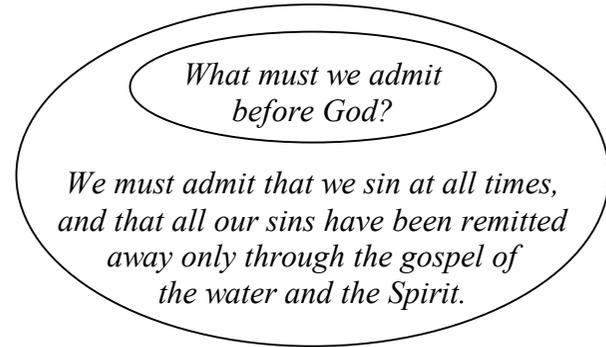


My fellow Christians, do we or do we not continue to commit sins as we live in this world? —Of course we do.— We indeed continue to sin until the very day we pass away. If this is the case, then isn't it true that these sins that we commit throughout our entire lifetime all belong



to the sins of the world? They all belong to the sins of the world. But didn't Jesus Christ take upon all these sins of the world once for all by being baptized by John the Baptist? He indeed took them all way.

And did He or did He not carry these sins of the world and die for us on the Cross? Of course He did. And didn't Jesus Christ then rise from the dead again, and hasn't He now become our true Savior? He has indeed become our true Savior. Our Lord lives now, and He has become the Savior of all those who believe in the gospel of the water and the Spirit. We have to know clearly and believe in this true gospel. Unless we do so, we can never be freed from our sins, even if we profess to believe in Jesus.



If we do not even admit that we are bound to continue to sin on this earth until the day we die, it is simply impossible for us to even believe in the Lord. How can someone who is not a sinner have any need to believe in Jesus as the Savior? It is written, "*Those who are well have no need of a physician, but those who are sick*" (Matthew 9:12). Can anyone say that though he had sinned against God and man before, he will never sin again? If we are confident of ourselves that we will never sin again, and if we are so perfect as to



never sin again indeed, then what need is there for us to believe in Jesus as our Savior?

If one does not know that Jesus took away all the sins of the world, and is oblivious to the Truth that Jesus fulfilled all the righteousness of God by taking upon all our sins through John the Baptist when He was baptized, could this person be saved from his sins by just believing in this Lord somehow? Who dares to say that he is confident enough to never sin again?

My fellow saints, through the baptism that Jesus received from John the Baptist, He took upon all the sins that you and I commit throughout our entire lifetime. This is why we must believe in this Jesus, who took away all the sins of our entire lifetime through His baptism, as our Savior, and only when we believe so can we become sinless. Before we believe in the Lord as our Savior, we must first admit that we are the seeds of transgression, and that we are bound to

continue to sin throughout our lifetime until the day we die. Only those who acknowledge their sinful nature before God can have the right faith, and only they can believe in the true gospel of the water and the Spirit.

It is extremely important for us to admit to God that we are bound to sin until the day we die. Whenever we sin in this world, whether out of our weaknesses or for whatever reason, we must admit that we sinned, and we must also acknowledge that Jesus took upon all these sins once for all by being baptized by John the Baptist, and that all our sins were indeed passed onto Him—only then can we have the true faith. It is when we have such faith that we move far away from all our sins and all the condemnation of sin, and become truly close to the Lord instead. It is in the gospel of the water and the Spirit that we can become truly clean and move away from darkness.



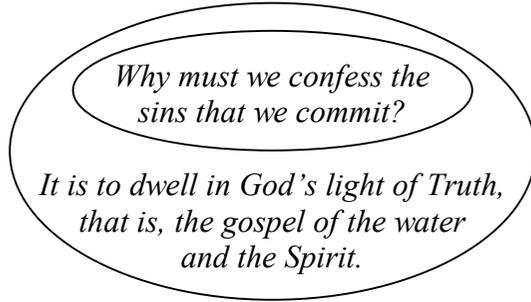
Rather than trying to hide our sins from God while living our lives of faith before Him, we need to come before His bright light of Truth and confess, “Lord, I am such a sinner. I am bound to sin until the day I die, but I believe that Jesus came to this earth to save me from my sins, and that He accepted all the sins of this world by being baptized by John the Baptist.” By believing in the gospel Truth of the water and the Spirit and confessing our sins, we become closer to God in His light of Truth, for the Lord took upon all our sins once for all through the water and the Spirit. Just as the sacrificial offering of the Old Testament accepted the sins of the Israelites with the laying on of hands, our Lord Jesus accepted all the sins of the world through John the Baptist.

For us to believe like this in what the Lord has done for us is the truly right faith. If our faith is not like this, but instead we hide the sins that we

commit in this world from God and try to atone for our sins by doing something good and virtuous, far from being redeemed, we will only end up falling deeper into the pit of an even greater sin. When this happens, our hearts will be darkened by our sins, and we will become so ashamed of ourselves that we will not be able to face anyone.

Without faith in the gospel of the water and the Spirit, neither can we call on the name of God, nor can we discern right from wrong, for our reason, wisdom, and perception will all be clouded. This is what Satan wants to happen to us. For those who do not believe in the gospel of the water and the Spirit, and therefore not only do not pass their sins to Jesus, but even try to hide themselves from God, the great wrath of God will follow.





We must confess to God that our seeds are such that we just cannot help but continue to sin, and we must also believe that by being baptized, our Lord took upon all these sins that we commit in this world until the day we die. We must believe that our Lord thus shouldered the sins of the world, carried them to the Cross, and bore all the condemnation of sin by shedding His blood on it. It is by thus believing in the gospel Truth of the water and the Spirit that Jesus forever becomes the Savior of believers. It is by

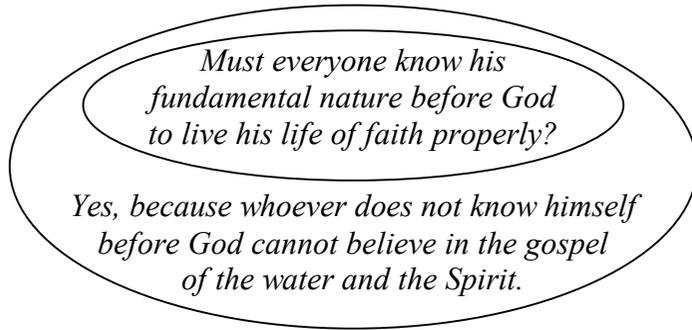
believing in the gospel of the water and the Spirit that we are washed from all our sins, and it is by this faith that we become God's own people.

It is by believing in the gospel of the water and the Spirit that we become the ones who are truly sinless, whose hearts are as white as snow. It is then when our hearts become as light as a feather, able to serve our Holy God as His workers and praise Him. My dear fellow saints, none other than this is the very power of the gospel of the water and the Spirit.

The so-called "gospel of the Cross" that the people of this world believe posits that we are sanctified by our own daily efforts not to sin, but we can never cleanse our hearts as white as snow by believing like this. Unless we believe in the gospel of the water and the Spirit, our hearts can never become as light as a feather. We cannot help but sin in this world, and we do indeed sin all the time, but when we believe that our Lord



took away all our sins by being baptized, bore all the condemnation of our sins by shedding His blood on the Cross, and has thereby saved you and me from all our sins, we can still become God's children only by faith.



The Bible describes the Pharisees as hypocrites. Whenever they saw someone even slightly unclean, they pulled up their sleeves to cover their eyes, lest they be polluted by what their eyes saw. But in fact, they, too, were filthy

before God. They were the kind of people who were totally ignorant of themselves and only too eager to stone others to death, constantly invoking the Law. This is none other than the sad portrait of today's worldly Christians and the servants of Satan.

Those who do not know themselves should learn from Socrates first. What did he say to us? He famously said, "Know yourself." What a wise saying is this? There have been many philosophers in this world, but no one left as famous a remark as this motto. Socrates said something that was worthy of a great philosopher. Many of his contemporary philosophers only boasted of their own wisdom, speaking loftily of asceticism and hedonism, and telling everyone how to live. But Socrates did not bother with them and simply said, "Know yourself. Before you say anything, first realize who you truly are. When you have so many



shortcomings yourself, what qualifies you to comment on whether others have done right or wrong?”

The Bible also makes this point. Jesus said, *“First remove the plank from your own eye, and then you will see clearly to remove the speck from your brother’s eye”* (Matthew 7:5). This, my fellow Christians, is the reason why we must be clear about who we really are, and that we are sinful beings. You need to realize that our Lord has become the true Savior of sinners, and you need to recognize that by believing in the gospel of the water and the Spirit, your hearts must be lightened as a feather.

You must acknowledge the fact that you commit countless sins while living on this earth, and you must confess your daily sins to God everyday by placing your faith in the gospel of the water and the Spirit. And you must also recognize that your sins are no longer in your

hearts, because you believe that our Lord took away all your sins by being baptized. It is by believing that Jesus bore all the condemnation of your sins that your hearts become as light as a feather.

Our hearts are that of someone who, by believing in the gospel Truth of the water and the Spirit, has acknowledged all his sins and passed them all to Jesus. This very heart of the one who passed his sins to Jesus Christ by believing that his sins were indeed passed onto Him through John the Baptist—none other than this is the heart that is as light as a feather. Do you believe this? Do you believe that Jesus Christ took upon all the sins of the world? Do you believe that He has become the propitiation for our sin? Do you believe that Jesus Christ is our Helper? Do you believe that He is the Lord who has blotted out all our sins?

Whenever we stumble out of our weaknesses,



and whenever we fall short, our Lord comes to us and says to us, “I took away those sins also. I am your Savior. I bore all your sins. You are My people, and you are My children.” So it is by faith that we have become His children. I thank our God for this abundant grace!

The Apostle John said, *“My little children, these things I write to you, so that you may not sin. And if anyone sins, we have an Advocate with the Father, Jesus Christ the righteous. And He Himself is the propitiation for our sins, and not for ours only but also for the whole world.”* My fellow believers, there are many Pharisee-like people who live in complete contradiction to this passage. Such people believe themselves to be highly virtuous and honest.

You probably have come across some investigative reports in TV uncovering unethical and unscrupulous acts committed by some crooked people. Seeing them, many viewers feel

quite indignant and enraged at them. But the fact of the matter is that before God, there can be no doubt that we are just like these people. Both the journalists who uncover these stories and the crooks who are exposed by the journalists are the same before God, in that they are the same human beings who likewise sin time after time.

Yet there are some people who entertain rather strange thoughts; that is to say, there are people who believe that they are not like the crooks at all. None other than such people are mentally ill. “I am never like these crooks.” Those who insist like this are so mentally ill that their sickness has reached beyond the stage of treatment and cannot be cured by the psychiatrists of this world. Most mental illnesses are treatable, but there are still many mentally ill patients who have exhausted all their treatment options and lie beyond the limits of modern medical science.

Remember the infamous scandal that had



rocked Washington a few years ago? President Clinton was put on an impeachment trial over the so-called “Zippergate.” Kenneth Starr, the special prosecutor assigned with the task of probing President Clinton’s misconduct, doggedly pursued him in a relentless fashion. But was Clinton the only person who was sexually immoral and lustful? I would like to say to Starr and the American public, “Are you any better than Clinton? Know yourselves!”

The Bible says, *“For all have sinned and fall short of the glory of God, being justified freely by His grace through the redemption that is in Christ Jesus” (Romans 3:23-24)*. It is said here that it is because of our Lord that all of us have been saved.

You must never have the eyes of the Pharisees. You must never have their hearts. My fellow saints, can anyone condemn or judge anyone else? No one can do this. No man can

judge any other fellow human being. Remember the story about the adulterous woman caught in the act? The Pharisees and the scribes wanted to stone her to death, but what did Jesus say? He said to them, *“He who is without sin among you, let him throw a stone at her first” (John 8:7)*.

The kind of people whom Jesus considered to be the most repulsive, filthy, and disgraceful was none other than the Pharisees and the scribes. There are countless such people in this world. All the religionists of this world are like these Pharisees and scribes. In their hypocrisy, the religionists of this world claim to be holy outside, but inside they are rotten to the core. When we look into what’s really inside these worldly religionists, we can easily see that they are all corrupt. This is why Jesus Christ came to this earth to save all such sinners from their sins, and to do so, He had to be baptized to take upon all the sins of mankind.



My fellow believers, each and every one of all our sins were passed onto Jesus Christ once for all. And by carrying these sins of the world to the Cross and dying on it, Jesus has saved those of us who believe in Him. Therefore, it is by believing in the Word of God that one can be saved perfectly, as the Bible states, *“For with the heart one believes unto righteousness, and with the mouth confession is made unto salvation” (Romans 10:10).*

What, then, must be acknowledge and believe? We must realize that we are worthless beings who are bound to sin until the day we die, and we must believe in the gospel of the water and the Spirit. And to have such faith consistently, we must confess all the sins that we commit. We must confess them as the following: “Lord, I commit sins everyday. Not a day goes by when I do not sin, but for each and every day, I end up committing all kinds of iniquities. But

You, my Lord, took away all these sins also.” We must confess ourselves as we really are, and we must believe in the gospel of the water and the Spirit. Unless we do so, we can never be saved from our sins. For all of us, in other words, we cannot be saved from our sins unless we believe in the gospel of the water and the Spirit.

In 1 John 2:3-11, the Apostle John goes on to say at length, *“Now by this we know that we know Him, if we keep His commandments. He who says, ‘I know Him,’ and does not keep His commandments, is a liar, and the truth is not in him. But whoever keeps His word, truly the love of God is perfected in him. By this we know that we are in Him. He who says he abides in Him ought himself also to walk just as He walked. Brethren, I write no new commandment to you, but an old commandment which you have had from the beginning. The old commandment is the word which you heard from the beginning.*



*Again, a new commandment I write to you, which thing is true in Him and in you, because the darkness is passing away, and the true light is already shining. He who says he is in the light, and hates his brother, is in darkness until now. He who loves his brother abides in the light, and there is no cause for stumbling in him. But he who hates his brother is in darkness and walks in darkness, and does not know where he is going, because the darkness has blinded his eyes.”*

The key point that summarizes this passage is this: “He who keeps His commandments knows that he is dwelling in God. But he who does not keep them dwells in darkness.” For us to live according God’s commandments is to love God and to love one another. Put into a single question, at issue here is whether or not the righteous love each other. In other words, what is at stake is whether the righteous hate each other and are jealous of one another, or they love each

other; whether or not they know that they have indeed become God’s own people; whether they realize that they have been clothed in the same grace by Jesus Christ and give the same recognition to one another; and whether or not they love each other. It is said here that he who does not love dwells in darkness, and that he who dwells in darkness has been blinded by this sin.

The Apostle John also speaks about the new and old commandments, saying, “*The old commandment is the word which you heard from the beginning. Again, a new commandment I write to you.*” Whether old or new, all the commandments boil down to love. Just as the Old Testament’s Law commanded us to love God and to love our neighbors as our own bodies, so is the new commandment is centered on love, on what Jesus told us—“Love one another, as I have loved you.” Those who do not love, regardless of whatever reason, are sinning



against God, and they are by no means living their lives according to His will. They are utterly arrogant, standing before God as if they were judges. Such people are most wicked.

My fellow believers, this lesson is equally applicable to all of us, to all our brothers and sisters of faith, as well as to the servants of God, who are all living their lives of faith. Nothing could be more contradictory than to believe ourselves to be problem-free while looking down on others as being worse than us, and to pick every shortcoming that others have while being completely unable to see our own shortcomings. We must therefore truly love one another. Our hearts must truly care for each other. This love is not to be shown only on the surface, but we must cherish one another from the depth of our hearts, realizing that our fellow believers are of our own race and the people of God. This caring heart must be ours. Anyone who does not have this

loving heart is on a wrong track. Turning the weaknesses of others into our own advantage is no love. To turn the weaknesses of others into our own weaknesses is what love is all about.

For those who find joy in others' weaknesses and turn them into their own advantage, this can only mean that love has left them already. They are no longer actually dwelling in the Word of our Lord. Though they may have received the remission of their sins, they are not walking in the Word. God cannot unite with such people who turn others' weaknesses into their advantage and find joy in them, and they will end up drifting away from everyone.

In Christ, all of us must become one united together, like fine flour becomes one dough. Just as flour can turn into bread and noodle only when it is first knead into one dough, if you remain scattered around all on your own, this will amount to nothing. Each of us standing on



our own is easily blown away at the slightest wind. Just as each wheat grain must first be ground and the resulting flour must be knead into one dough to turn into edible bread, it is only when we the righteous unite together and become one with God that we can become worthy workers before Him. This is why all of us must become one and love each other.

We must all remember our Lord who has become our Advocate. ☒



# **CHAPTER 2**

---

## **SERMON 3**

**(1 John 2:7-11)**

**“Are You Living in  
God’s Commandment?”**



Contents



## **Are You Living in God's Commandment?**

**< 1 John 2:7-11 >**

**“Brethren, I write no new commandment to you, but an old commandment which you have had from the beginning. The old commandment is the word which you heard from the beginning. Again, a new commandment I write to you, which thing is true in Him and in you, because the darkness is passing away, and the true light is already shining. He who says he is in the light, and hates his brother, is in darkness until now. He who loves his brother abides in the light, and there is no cause for stumbling in him. But he who hates his brother is in darkness and walks in darkness, and does not know where**

**he is going, because the darkness has blinded his eyes.”**

The Apostle John was someone who had reached a profound understanding of God's love. He was the disciple that was loved the most by our Lord, the Son of God; he was the one who felt this love of the Lord most deeply, and who bore compelling witness of this love to us. This Lord had forsaken His throne of glory and came to this earth to save us from all the sins of the world.

The Apostle John believed that the Lord came to this earth incarnated in the flesh of man in order to save the entire mankind from their sins, and that He personally bore the suffering, curses, despise, insults, death, and the condemnation of sin that we were supposed to bear. And because John thus believed in the Truth of salvation that



Jesus had given him, he could be saved from all his sins.

The Apostle John knew very well just how grateful he should be for his salvation from sin, and how great the love of our Lord was. John knew, in other words, how great a sacrifice the Lord had made to save him, and how deeply He had loved him. It was because he knew the love of Jesus so well that he wrote this Epistle of love to all the saints.

Apart from the Gospel of John and his three Epistles of 1, 2, and 3 John, the Apostle John also wrote the Book of Revelation. It was to him that Jesus had revealed Himself the most. It was through the Apostle John, above all other disciples, that God could tell us the most just how much He loved us. This bears witness to us of the fact that the Apostle John had the most knowledge of the love of God. So, John is called the "Apostle of love." Because the Apostle John

was the one who knew the love of the Lord more than anyone else, He also bore witness of this love the most.

It is actually no exaggeration to see 1 John as the "book of love." We usually refer to 1 Corinthians 13 as the "chapter of love." This chapter, of course, does talk much about love also. But the one who testified the love of Jesus in all its many aspects is this Apostle John, for he knew very well just how much Jesus loved His saints.

## **John Was One Bore Witness of the Lord's Love**

The Apostle John was one who spoke about the love of the Lord. In 1 John 4:18-20, he said, "*There is no fear in love; but perfect love casts out fear, because fear involves torment. But he*



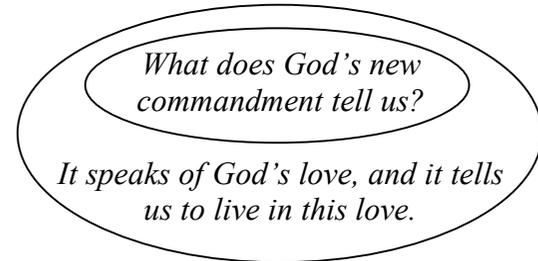
*who fears has not been made perfect in love. We love Him because He first loved us. If someone says, 'I love God,' and hates his brother, he is a liar; for he who does not love his brother whom he has seen, how can he love God whom he has not seen?"*

In accordance to what he said here, that there is no fear in love, John said that those who truly know the love of God and have received this love do not approach God in fear, but in true joy, and that they also love their brothers and sisters who have become God's people. This is because we have all been clothed in God's love.

This is why he declared, *"If someone says, 'I love God,' and hates his brother, he is a liar; for he who does not love his brother whom he has seen, how can he love God whom he has not seen?"*

Like this, the main theme of 1 John is the "love of God," and John concludes that the

crystallization of God's love is the gospel of the water and the Spirit. He deals with these two themes in turn in this Epistle, and finally in chapter 5, he explains what the gospel of the water and the Spirit, *"which you heard from the beginning"* (1 John 2:24), is.



1 John 2:8 says, *"Again, a new commandment I write to you, which thing is true in Him and in you, because the darkness is passing away, and the true light is already shining."* Before we were born again, we used to be sinners who did not know salvation and had not received the remission of our sins; we knew neither God nor



the Truth; we were not the people of God but the children of darkness; and we merely were seeds of evildoers. Therefore, we could not love each other in the Truth. If those who had remained as the children of darkness and had not come into the light of Truth still loved one another, cared for each other, and were unselfish and devoted to one another, this would be rather unusual and strange. Honestly speaking, these acts were only hypocritical.

However, now, we have come to know that the darkness has passed away and the true light is shone upon us, and we have become God's children who have received His true love and true salvation. None other than you and I, who have been born again by believing in the gospel of the water and the Spirit, are the children of God. How can we then, as God's children, hate each other? Those who hate each other will end up as liars before God. If we have indeed become

God's people, then hatred can never arise out of our hearts.

While we may bring each other's mistakes, errors, and missteps to attention, rebuke one another for these failures, and admonish and help each other to repent, it is a sin for us to fundamentally hate each other out of our hearts, to push one another away, to reproach and to judge each other.

In our family of the born-again, in other words, we may have ill feelings toward one another temporarily, but we cannot really hate our brothers and sisters, the people of God and His servants, out of the depth of our hearts. Even the world has a motto: "Condemn the offence, but pity the offender." This saying, of course, originated from the tendency for everyone to take justice into his own hands, when in fact the court has the sole legitimacy to judge secular crimes.

If we indeed know and believe in the true light



of God, if we have indeed been perfectly remitted from all our sins by knowing and believing in the gospel of the water and the Spirit, if we know that God has blotted out all our sins, and if you also know and believe in this love of God that has saved you, then we cannot truly hate each other. Therefore, if anyone hates his brothers and sisters in his heart, then he is a liar before God.

Even before we were born again, God had given us the commandment to love. God had commanded us not to do evil deeds, but to do virtuous deeds. According to His commandments, we have to do these things before Him and people—that is, we have to obey what He commanded us to do: “You shall have no other gods before Me. Just worship, love, and honor Him. Honor your father and your mother. You shall not murder, commit adultery, steal, or bear false witness against your neighbor.”

Although God had told us clearly that we had to live by these commandments, we had failed to do so. We are fundamentally incapable of living like this. But the Apostle John tells us once again, “*Brethren, I write no new commandment to you, but an old commandment which you have had from the beginning. The old commandment is the word which you heard from the beginning. Again, a new commandment I write to you, which thing is true in Him and in you, because the darkness is passing away, and the true light is already shining*” (1 John 2:7-8). He is reminding us here once again that God has told us to love one another.

*What is the greatest issue that the Bible focuses on?*

*It is God's love.*

God's love for us is this: Our Lord came to



this earth and has blotted out all our sins with the gospel of the water and the Spirit. This love, which God has for us, is the greatest and fundamental love that enables us to have true love for others. Owing to this love, we can have all kinds of love—the love that pastors have for the saints, the love that our brothers and sisters have for God, the love that we have for our pastors and for our brothers and sisters. These are not the carnal love but the spiritual love, for they all originate from the greatest love of God for us.

It is in this love of God, in the gospel of the water and the Spirit, that we experience these things. True fellowship is found only in this spiritual love. Since our very existence is made possible only in God's love, it is because of this love of God that we can eat, drink, laugh, talk, breathe, and go on with our lives. It is because the love of God is so abundant that we can breathe on this earth and feel this love. In this

love of God, we have received the spiritual blessings of Heaven. Because Jesus Himself loved us, in other words, you and I have become God's own children who are now living in peace.

This is why we must love one another all the more. All God's admonishments and rebukes are essentially rooted in His love. So when we see the weaker brothers and sisters, we come to have more compassion and deeper love for them. But those whose hearts are hardened before God are rebuked more harshly in His love.

For such people, it is God's love for us to rebuke them harshly, to scold them, and even punish them in order to turn their hearts back to Him. Leaving them alone, even as it is obvious to us that they are heading toward a cliff, is not the love of God. Rather, God's love is to prevent them from heading to their own destruction by any way possible. You need to realize that to point out the mistakes of our fellow believers in



Christ is not meant to bring suffering to them, but it is meant to show them God's love.

A heart that cares for each other—this is what love is. When one says welcome to the others with their lips, but his heart is filled with enmity and malicious intentions, then he is not in the love of God. Being kind with a dark, ulterior motive cannot be called as God's love. When such a person, who had talked as if he was willing to do anything for us, instead ends up stealing everything that we have and flees, we do not say that the fraud was committed only at the moment that he fled, but from the very first moment that he laid out his trap to swindle us.

To care for each other from the depth of our hearts is what God's love entails. It is from our hearts that love spring forth. If our hearts had harbored malicious intentions, then even if such intentions are not revealed through our acts, they are still all fraudulent.

The Lord said, *“But God composed the body, having given greater honor to that part which lacks it, that there should be no schism in the body, but that the members should have the same care for one another”* (1 Corinthians 12:24-25). This means that He has placed such weak members who cannot live but only by His love as even more precious members of His Church. We must care for all the people of God, and we must pray for all those who are yet to be born again.

We must pray for the Church, the Body of Christ, for our brothers and sisters, and for the servants of God. All these prayers are from God's love. This is because we want every saint to prosper in God's love. We pray for these things because when the saints thrive both in body and spirit, it is a blessing for us the servants of God also.

Since it is a joy to God for His people to do well in both body and spirit, and this is why we



also pray for them in joy. Also, because the joy of our brothers and sisters is none other than the true joy of our Church, we pray for them with best wishes from the bottom of our hearts. All these things must be fulfilled by faith in the love of God. Without this love of God, nothing that we do has any meaning.

I do not want any members of God's family to go astray. I never, ever want this to happen. This is why I sometimes try to prod you to return, even if it requires me to rebuke you harshly. I do not want you to get hurt, to suffer, to be lost, to wander and to cry. All that I want is for your souls to prosper. Why? Because I love all of you so much. When it is time for me to comfort your aching hearts, this is indeed what I do, but when this is not the case, it is my harsh rebukes that come from a loving heart. Just as God loves you, your spiritual leaders also love you always.

You need to realize that if you dislike listening

to what your spiritual leaders say to you, thinking that they are only nagging at you, or if you think that they are being angry at you, and just want to cover your ears, you are actually rejecting God's love. If your pastors have no love for you in their hearts, neither would they rebuke you, nor would they pay you any attention. The opposite of love is indifference. When we do not love someone, we do not say anything to him, but we just turn away in indifference.

By believing in the Truth of salvation that God has bestowed on us in His love, we have now become new creations. It is by our faith in the gospel of the water and the Spirit that we live. Therefore, those among our brothers and sisters whose hearts are wounded must be healed from their wounds. Those whose hearts are arrogant must have their hearts humbled; those who are overflowing must be subtracted, and those who are insufficient must be filled. All of us must in



this way be made new in the love of Jesus Christ. We must be made new, not perpetuate our old selves.

We must live in God's love, believing in this love and practicing it. It is in God's love that we must live our lives of faith by having faith in all His Word. What is the greatest commandment in Christ? It is love. This one word called love is the greatest commandment of all.

God's love for us is so strong that anyone or anything cannot separate us from His love. It is written, *"For love is as strong as death, Jealousy as cruel as the grave"* (Song of Solomon 8:6). There was someone who, when those whom He loved were deceived by Satan and facing death, showed His love for them by laying down His own life—this someone is none other Jesus. Jesus loved us, and yet deceived by Satan, we had fallen into sin, and we had been suffering and dying. But to save us, who had been

teetering at the edge of Hades, Jesus did not hesitate to face the death of His body. This is the very love that God has for us. None other than this unconditional love God has given us, the love with which He gave up His life to save us, is true love.

*Can those who have become  
the righteous people by believing in  
the light of Truth continue to dwell  
and live in darkness?*

*No, they cannot.*

The Apostle John said in 1 John 2:9-10, *"He who says he is in the light, and hates his brother, is in darkness until now. He who loves his brother abides in the light, and there is no cause for stumbling in him."* My dear fellow believers,



the Bible clearly points out here that those who claim to dwell among the righteous and to abide in the light, and yet hate their brothers—that is, those who say that they know and believe that God has delivered us from our sins and brought us to life, and yet hate their brothers—have dwelt in darkness until now. He who hates his brothers from the depth of his heart is one who still abides in darkness. John said here that it is those who love their brothers that truly abide in the light, and that there is no cause for stumbling in them. If, on the other hand, you and I really hate our brothers in our hearts, then our consciences feel uneasy. But if we do not hate anyone in our hearts, then there is no such uncomfortable feeling.

Let's say here that one of our brothers, sisters, or the servants of God did something wrong to us. If this incites anger in our hearts, leading us to hate this person wholeheartedly, to abhor him

and to hold him in contempt, then there is something seriously wrong with us. If such a hateful heart is what is actually found in your own hearts as the born-again, you must realize here that your hearts now lie in the wrong place. It is because you hate someone in your hearts, are angry at him, and detest him that you come to have such an uneasy feeling over him. We come to feel uncomfortable before God and even to ourselves. Put differently, we feel guilty in our consciences.

“I hated him because he hated me first, and so what have I done wrong here?” The people of this world may think like this and justify themselves in this way, but for those of us who believe in the gospel Word of the water and the Spirit, this is not feasible, because we are the light of Truth. Because we have been shone with the true light, and because we have been remitted from countless sins beyond any description, we



just cannot live in darkness. The righteous are walking in the light, and there is no cause for stumbling in their hearts.

However, the Apostle John also said, *“But he who hates his brother is in darkness and walks in darkness, and does not know where he is going, because the darkness has blinded his eyes.”* Those who hate their brothers, in other words, are still living in darkness. John said here that such people walk in darkness and do not know where they are going. Those who are in darkness do not know that they are bound to make misjudgments, for they do not know right from wrong.

At times, you and I, who have become righteous, may also find ourselves in darkness. Because God has shone His light of Truth on us, by faith we have become the true light, God's own people, righteous and sinless saints. Therefore, when we find a cause for stumbling in

our hearts, we must truly realize our mistakes and come before God in faith. How could we continue to abide in darkness?

If we really hate someone in our hearts, this becomes a cause for our stumbling and a wrongdoing before God, and if we fail to realize that it is wrong for us to hate and continue to harbor hatred in our hearts, we will turn spiritually blind. Unable to discern right from wrong, we will then end up falling into grave fallacies and ultimately turn into the Devil's servants.

So we must not let hatred linger in our hearts for more than a day, we must not abide in sin, but we must instead remove all the remnants of darkness by confessing them in faith. Only when we thus live by having this pure faith in our hearts can we live our lives before God as His pure and bright light.

Has darkness passed away from us or not? Of



course it has. The true light has now shone upon us. So for us, *“old things have passed away”* (2 *Corinthians 5:17*). We have already escaped from our accursed fate. Because God has saved us from our sins, given us new life, and brought us alive, and because we believe in all this, we have become His own people, and we have received eternal life.

As the people who have received eternal life, then, where must we abide in? We must abide in the light of Truth that knows God. Our hearts must dwell in the light of salvation. We must abide in the light of God's love. God has indeed saved us like this through the gospel of the water and the Spirit, and He has illuminated us with the light of Truth. By perfectly saving us from all our sins, in other words, He has made us His light. So even if we are told not to abide in the light of Truth, we must dwell in this light, shine this true light on every nook and corner of the

world, and live our lives by faith. It is the love of God that He spoke to us through the Apostle John.

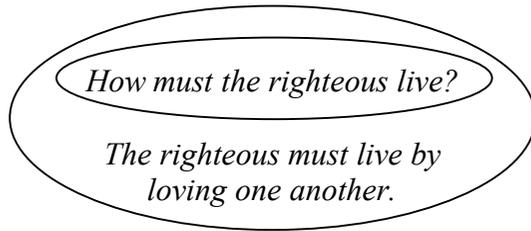
When the Apostle John says, *“My little children, these things I write to you, so that you may not sin,”* what he wants to convey to us is that we may not commit the fundamental sin of not believing in the gospel of the water and the Spirit.

This passage is particularly relevant to all Christians. Those who say they abide in Christianity but do not believe in the gospel of the water and the Spirit have not yet discovered the true light of salvation. Before God, such people are still abiding in darkness, not in the light, for they have not been illuminated with the true light.

Such people are the ones who try to receive the remission of their sins everyday by giving their prayers of repentance. They are trying to



follow God by following fallacious doctrines. But no one can understand the gospel of the water and the Spirit through their prayers of repentance, nor through the teachings of the doctrine of incremental sanctification. Those who try to understand the Word of God based on their own thoughts, in other words, cannot be illuminated with the light of Truth. Put differently, they simply cannot receive the remission of their sins.



After receiving the remission of our sins, how are our spiritual lives? Those whose sins have been remitted away abide in the gospel of the

water and the Spirit, and they love all souls as well. In other words, because we have been remitted from all our sins, we love our brothers and sisters whose sins have also been remitted, and in this love we have fellowship with each other and cherish one another as the co-owners of new life. And we do not harbor hatred in our hearts, nor do we have any malicious intentions toward others.

If, by any chance, such minds do arise, then we must first think of the light of God, consider whether the people whom we are dealing with have received the remission of their sins or not, and then decide how to treat him. We are more than able to examine ourselves and each other, to withdraw our misplaced hatred, and love one another in God's love. Since our Lord has blotted out not only my sins but also the sins of all our brothers and sisters, and the sins of all human beings, it is only proper that we should love one

another by believing in the gospel of the water and the Spirit. We really must love another as we live our lives. This is the message that the Apostle John is giving to all those who believe in the gospel of the water and the Spirit.

How are our lives of faith? Where are your hearts abiding now? Have you ever hated someone with all your hearts, even to want to kill this person? Do you have, by any chance, such a hateful heart even now? If so, then your hearts are absolutely misplaced. When the Lord has already cleansed away all your sins, why are you holding onto each other's sins? Though our sins were as red as blood and as many as the sand in a desert, our Lord has washed them all away through the gospel of the water and the Spirit and turned our hearts as white as snow. When this is the case, and if you have indeed been completely remitted from all your sins by believing in this, shouldn't your hearts, now that they are clean,

abhor darkness?

When our Lord has blotted out so many sins that we had, all those sins that were as thick as dark, stormy clouds, how could we hold onto these sins that God had already made disappear, to continue to harbor anger, to sin, and to abide in darkness? From the very moment God blotted out all our sins and turned us into His children, we no longer have had to live in darkness. Since He has blotted out all our sins, in other words, we, too, must confess our wrongdoings to each other, rebuke one another for such wrongdoings, and apologize to each other as well, but we must cast aside fundamentally wicked hearts.

By any chance, my dear fellow Christians, is there anyone among you who is still grinding his teeth in hatred? Is there anyone who is always carrying such a hateful heart? Does anyone think, "Whenever I get a chance, I'll surely have my revenge"? If there is such a person, this person is



not someone who has come into Christ. Such people are not only spiritually blind, but they are deceiving themselves and lying. They themselves are being hoodwinked. If you have truly come into Christ and been illuminated with the true light, you may hate sin, but you will not hate the sinner. Is this not true? Of course it is!

We must listen carefully to what the Apostle John told us. In 1 John 1:5, he said, "*God is light.*" Is God light or not? In this light, are there some black dots at times, or is it full of only light itself? It is entirely light. This then means that our hearts, as believers, are also entirely filled with the light. Are there any black spots in this light? No, there is none! Has God left some of our sins around, instead of blotting them all out, or has He made them disappear completely? Our Lord has indeed blotted them all out perfectly, and therefore we have no sin whatsoever.

This is why we the righteous, as the people

clothed in God's love by faith, must love and cherish each other, and why we must illuminate the light of Truth to those who, still not knowing this Truth, have not come into Jesus Christ, and embrace them into our arms as well. At least among ourselves, who have received the remission of sin, we must always remember that our fellow believers are our race, our family, our people, our brothers and sisters. Such thoughts, such faith, and such hearts must always accompany us as we live our lives.

Once, Jesus asked those who were sitting around Him, "*Who is My mother, or My brothers?*" He then answered His own question, saying, "*Here are My mother and My brothers! For whoever does the will of God is My brother and My sister and mother*" (Mark 3:33-35).

What, then, is this "will of the Father"? The same phrase is used in the Lord's Prayer: "*Your will be done on earth as it is in heaven*"



(*Matthew 6:10*). It is for Him to save us from all our sins through the propitiation of His only begotten Son, Jesus Christ. It is to save souls from their eternal death, as it is written in the Bible, "*This is the will of the Father who sent Me, that of all He has given Me I should lose nothing, but should raise it up at the last day*" (*John 6:39*). Therefore, we are the Lord's family as long as we are dedicating ourselves to the gospel of the water and the Spirit.

The Lord has led us, who only had darkness, to the light by wholly saving us from our sins. Jesus Christ, conceived in the womb of the Virgin Mary, was born unto this earth; when He turned 30, He took upon all the sins of mankind by being baptized by John the Baptist; and by dying on the Cross and rising from the dead again, He has illuminated us with the perfect light. He has given us His perfect salvation. By believing in this Truth, we have been perfectly

saved, and we have therefore become God's children who do His will. Those who believe in this way are our family.

You and I cannot avoid but continue to sin throughout our entire lifetime. But our Lord came to this earth over 2,000 years ago, and when He turned 30, He completely took away all our sins by being baptized by John. At the age of 33, He gave up His body and died on the Cross, rose from the dead again in three days, and has thereby brought us to life in perfection. He has washed us from all our sins, delivered us from all our condemnation, and has saved us perfectly. And He has given us new life. Do you believe this? We have now become the perfect light. You and I therefore must now live our lives in this light.

My fellow saints, can light and darkness mingle with each other, mix together, or exist in harmony and accord side by side? Light and



darkness cannot coexist together. Why? Because when even the slightest amount of light is shone on darkness, it is all turned into light. Take your church building as an example. In the evenings, when darkness descends, with the light switch turned off, the whole church building is enveloped in darkness, but when the switch is turned on, the light once again illuminate the whole building and all darkness fades away.

If we have become one with Jesus Christ, then we are also the light, for Jesus Christ Himself is the light. If we believe that He has saved us perfectly, we are also the light because of this faith. We are no longer darkness. The Bible says, *“Old things have passed away; behold, all things have become new.”* Because we are the light, we must live the life of light by faith.

Have you really united with Jesus Christ by believing in the gospel of the water and the Spirit? If so, are you then light or darkness? You

are the light. Light is still light, even if you may be insufficient in your deeds. If you have held a grudge against a fellow saint and then realized that you have committed sin before God as a child of light, then the light that had almost been buried in darkness shines even more brightly.

When God has already written off all our sins, where is the need for us to still hang onto them? When Jesus took upon all the sins of the world by being baptized, and completed His salvation by bearing all our condemnation on the Cross, how could we, as the brothers and sisters of faith and the servants of God, bear a grudge against each other for the slightest wrongdoings and grind our teeth over them? How could we have this kind of darkness with us?

When such darkness visits us, we must immediately confess that we have this darkness, admit our wrongdoings to God, abide in the light and look to the fact that Jesus Christ took away



even these sins when He was baptized in the Jordan River, and meditate upon this Truth. Because Jesus bore all our sins by receiving this baptism, carried the sins of the world to the Cross to be crucified, and thereby fulfilled all the righteousness of God, we can always abide in the perfect light. Our hearts become illuminated when we once again ruminates on the Truth that Jesus has saved us perfectly by accepting all our sins through His baptism, shouldering them all, and bearing all our condemnation in our place. We must then thank God with our faith for enabling us to live the kind of life that can once again tolerate each other, cherish one another in our hearts, and love each other. This is the life of light that the Apostle John is speaking of.

Because we human beings are insufficient, it is more than possible for us to wrong each other, but if we were unable to tolerate this, and instead turn such mistakes into defects to harp on and

harbor hatred against each other at all times, then this cannot be the proper life of faith. If, by any chance, your hearts are like this, then think about how God has blotted out all your sins, how He has saved you from all your sins. Even if there were some wrongdoings that we have done to each other, when the Lord has blotted out all such sins also, how could we judge one another? If your hearts are hurt, then all that you have to do is say so and explain why, and then the other person can just admit his wrongdoing and apologize. Like this, in the love of our Lord, in His light, we must be able to reconcile with each other from our hearts and live in harmony.

All of us must know the Truth of the water and the Spirit that has enabled us to be born again. I thank the Lord for allowing me to know this Truth. Those who still do not know this gospel Truth of the water and the Spirit must listen to and learn from those who know, and



thereby come into the light of Truth.

One thing that I would like to say clearly here is that human beings are human beings. There can be no doubt that everyone is a human being who cannot avoid but sin because of his weaknesses. Humans are such that they always disobey God, flout His will, and commit wrongdoings against Him. However, the Lord still shows His mercy to us, the wrongdoers, saying, "*For God has committed them all to disobedience, that He might have mercy on all*" (Romans 11:32). It is because our Lord had compassion for such people like us that He has illuminated us with the light of Truth. It is because God loved us that He has saved us. Our Lord ultimately tells us that He made us as weak beings so that we may be saved.

You must not look at your own thoughts and your own deeds, but you must look at the Lord. Do not think only of your own knowledge, but

listen carefully to what the Bible is actually telling you. True salvation will then come into your hearts and be planted. When all the confusion that had plagued your minds is removed, you will realize that God is indeed the Savior who has saved you from all your sins. And when you believe that God has saved you from all your sins, you can become united with the Lord, and also with His Church in such faith. By believing in the gospel of the water and the Spirit, we have become one body with God, and therefore His own people. God has already given you such blessings.

But if there is anyone who still has not received these blessings of God that He has bestowed through the gospel of the water and the Spirit, then it is my hope and prayer that such people would all believe in and come into this God-given gospel of the water and the Spirit. ☒

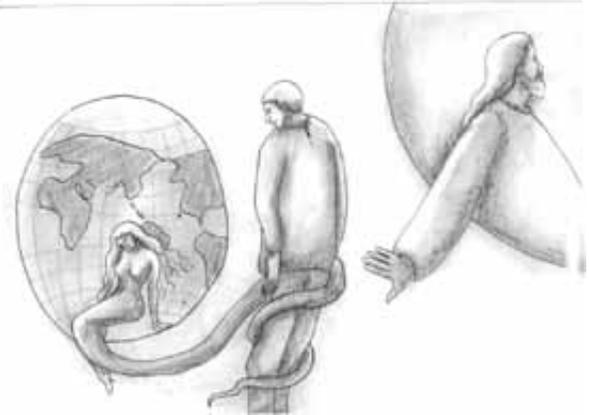


# CHAPTER 2

## SERMON 4

(1 John 2:15-17)

**“Do Not Love the World or  
The Things in the World”**



Contents



## Do Not Love the World or The Things in the World

< 1 John 2:15-17 >

**“Do not love the world or the things in the world. If anyone loves the world, the love of the Father is not in him. For all that is in the world—the lust of the flesh, the lust of the eyes, and the pride of life—is not of the Father but is of the world. And the world is passing away, and the lust of it; but he who does the will of God abides forever.”**

I know that you and I are struggling with three kinds of lust. In James 4:1, it is written, *“Where do wars and fights come from among you? Do they not come from your desires for pleasure that*

*war in your members?”* Here in 1 John, the Bible speaks of lust as the lust of the flesh, the lust of the eyes, and the pride of life.

In fact, it is because these three kinds of lust that we struggle with our lives of faith and so often stumble over the things of the world. Because of this lust of the flesh, the lust of the eyes, and the pride of life, our lives of faith are often interrupted, though we have been saved. And it saddens me deeply to see this happening.

The Bible frequently tells us to wait for the day of our Lord’s return and to persevere until that day, as it is written in James 5:7, *“Be patient, brethren, until the coming of the Lord.”* Just as the Bible admonishes us, I believe that until that day, we must dedicate our lives to the spreading of the gospel of the water and the Spirit and persevere with this precious work until its end.

I know, of course, that such a life of patience



is hard to live. We live through various hardships not because of anything else particular, but because of the lust of our flesh, the lust of our eyes, and the pride of our lives. Of course, you may consider these three kinds of greeds as nothing to you, but to actually fight against them and to follow the Lord can be difficult and painful.

The Apostle John tells us here in 1 John 2:15, *“Do not love the world or the things in the world. If anyone loves the world, the love of the Father is not in him.”* Indeed, if we love the things in the world even a bit, and if the lust of the flesh, the lust of the eyes, and the pride of life that love the world come into our hearts ever so slightly, then it becomes that much more difficult for us to lead our true lives of faith.

This does not mean, however, that we as Christians must be cut loose from the ties of the world. Our Lord did not tell us to leave the world

and live entirely apart from it. Rather, what He told us is to cast aside our greed. Nor did our Lord tell us to despise the world. He did tell us, however, to beware of the three kinds of lust in our hearts.

Until the last day, we must live our lives preaching the gospel, for before us, there are many souls that still have not received the remission of their sins. Yet this is no easy task; it is really difficult to spread the gospel of the water and the Spirit to everyone before our lives are over. Even so, no matter when our Lord returns, and no matter when we go and stand before His presence, we must preach the gospel of the water and the Spirit until that day. I thank the Lord for placing us in His Church, protecting us with spiritual fences, and enabling us to preach the gospel of the water and the Spirit, for we are such that if our hearts are drawn to the world ever so slightly, we simply would not be



able to serve the gospel.

I see how difficult it is to keep our hearts of faith. I think it is more difficult than to endure hard physical labor. Physical labor is not so hard, nor is it that difficult to live in this world—we simply do what we have to do. But for our hearts to move away from God is the greatest curse, and this is why it is so problematic and troublesome. So the Bible admonishes us, “*Keep your heart with all diligence, for out of it spring the issues of life*” (*Proverb 4:23*). Even so, because our Lord has blotted out all our sins, I believe that if we do not fall into these three kinds of lust too deeply, then this is not such an insurmountable problem.

How many souls are still there, to whom we must preach the gospel of the water and the Spirit? So that these souls would all come to believe in the gospel of the water and the Spirit and be saved from their sins, we must indeed

keep our hearts, turn around from our wrong ways, and live by faith.

Who knows when the Great Tribulation of seven years will descend to this world? In this age and time, the signs of the end times are arising all over. You may have heard of the abnormal climatic changes and the natural disasters that result from them. The boundary lines of the polar icecaps were reported to be retreating rapidly. There is no doubt that this is because of global warming. Great natural disasters unleashed by such climatic changes as El Niño have now become annual events.

Moreover, this age is filled with so much contention and conflict among nations. War and terrorist attacks break out without cease. Now is such an age. So when we think about how we can spread the gospel to our own family members and to all the souls throughout the whole world, and as well as how we can live by faith until the



day our Lord returns, we cannot help but rely on our faith in the Lord. And this is also the reason why we should keep our hearts with all diligence.

The Apostle John said, *“Do not love the world or the things in the world. If anyone loves the world, the love of the Father is not in him. For all that is in the world—the lust of the flesh, the lust of the eyes, and the pride of life—is not of the Father but is of the world. And the world is passing away, and the lust of it; but he who does the will of God abides forever”* (1 John 2:15-17).

Who does not love the things of the world? It is because everyone loves them so much that John told us not to love the things in the world. Though we love the things in the world, to preach the gospel of the water and the Spirit to people, we need to maintain self-control so that our hearts would not drown in the world. It is really difficult for us not to love this world as we live in it, but whatever the reason may be, if we

love this world, then there is no room for God’s love in our hearts, and if we love the world, then nor can we preach the gospel of the water and the Spirit to people. This is why we must not love this world.

The gospel of the water and the Spirit that you already believe is not so intellectually simple, nor easy to understand. Some people say that to believe in the gospel of the water and the Spirit is easier than to breathe, but it is difficult when one has to first remove all the lies that false teachers have spread.

So spreading the gospel of the water and the Spirit is possible only when we have the heart of the Father that loves all souls. If we have the Lord’s love in our hearts, then all that we have to do is spread this love. But if this God-given love is not in our hearts, but all that we love is the world, then there is nothing more difficult than trying to spread this love only grudgingly. Since



we have been perfectly saved from our sins by believing in the gospel of the water and the Spirit, we must absolutely keep our hearts if we were to preach this true gospel until the day our Lord returns. We must serve the gospel of the water and the Spirit, in other words, by turning our wrongful hearts around, by correcting them, by coming closer to the Lord, and by discarding the lust that keeps entering us. Only when we turn around, time after time, from our hearts that have gone astray can we serve the gospel of the water and the Spirit.

Today's scripture passage says, "*The world is passing away, and the lust of it; but he who does the will of God abides forever.*" My dear fellow believers, this age is the last age. Because the time is nearing, Satan is doing all he can to make everyone love this world. Technological advancement has exposed everyone to the countless temptations that provoke his lust.

Through such means of the world, Satan is trying to steal everything—our eyes, ears, lips, hands, feet, and even hearts.

When such an age passes by, there will be nothing remaining in this world anymore, but only war, earthquakes, disasters, and tribulations. Only destruction will come to everything that mankind has ever built. To this day, mankind has relentlessly pursued to further advance science and technology, but as their discoveries and inventions are not used for only good purposes, they will eventually face destruction from the very things that they created.

This is why God is telling us in this hour, "*Do not love the world or the things in the world.*" While it is okay for us to enjoy the things in this world, it is wrong to love them with our hearts. It is right for us to reign over the things in this world, to enjoy them, and to manage them well and use them for good purposes.



But no matter how much money we might have in this world, how many things to be proud of, and even the power to rule over the world, when this world and we ourselves face destruction, everything will be rendered completely useless. It is because the Apostle John knew this so well that he is telling us here in the Bible, *“Do not love the world or the things in the world.”* He told us not to love the things of the world because if we love them, the love of Christ is not in our hearts.

This message is something that we must take to our hearts and ruminate upon time after time, even if it is heard for a hundred times. These three kinds of lust are always near us, so that we may be enticed to follow them at anytime. But if we follow the three lusts of the flesh, then the love of the Father will disappear from our hearts and we will be cut from His love of salvation. Therefore, we must always be wary and be

careful of the things of the world, and instead of loving them, we must devote our hearts even more to the spreading the gospel of the water and the Spirit.

What is it that you and I need the most in this age and time? What is the greatest problem that you and I are now facing? It is for us to love this world. If something is wrong in our hearts and we are now living our lives of faith only in motion, then this can only mean that we are serving at least one of these three lusts—the lust of the flesh, the lust of the eyes, and the pride of life. If we follow the world like this and seek after our own lust, we cannot lead a proper life of faith, and as a result, we will end up perishing, as will our family.

So we must beware and be cautious of these three carnal lusts. Though such lusts of the flesh are in our heart, we must realize that they are not from God. The lust of the flesh, in other words,



comes from the world and Satan. Moreover, lusting after something does not mean that it could be satisfied fully just because we pursue it. It is only when God the Father allows us to have something that it becomes ours. The Bible states, *“Unless the LORD builds the house, they labor in vain who build it; Unless the LORD guards the city, the watchman stays awake in vain”* (Psalms 127:1). So for our hearts to lust after something is meaningless, and it is only wise for us to watch out for such greed and overcome it.

If we want to keep our lives of faith until the day our Lord returns, we must remember this one message that God told us here: *“Do not love the world or the things of the world.”* Only when we remember this commandment of God can we keep our lives of faith until the day of our Lord’s return. If we do not have the love of Christ in our hearts, then we cannot carry on with our lives of faith, for it is by the heart and faith that they are

led. This is why we must cast aside our love for this world until the love of Christ blossoms in our hearts instead. It is only when we cast aside such love for this world that the love of the Father can sprout in our hearts, and we can also serve the Lord, follow Him willingly, bear spiritual fruits with Him, and receive the fertility of the earth, abundant blessings, and care from God the Father as well. For us to be blessed both in body and spirit, we must not love the things in the world, but we must overcome the lust of the flesh and turn around from it.

It actually is not so hard to live a life of faith. We can lead this life of faith if we would just keep our hearts with all diligence, but if we fail to do so, then everything will simply collapse. As each year goes by, so do we come one step closer to the day our Lord returns, and yet it seems as though we have fallen asleep and are increasingly loving this world when we are in



fact supposed to wait for Him. In the parable of the ten virgins waiting for the bridegroom, even the five wise virgins fell asleep. In these end times, the whole world seems to have fallen asleep just like these virgins. Nonetheless, let us all cast aside our hearts' love for the world; let us live each year by doing the Lord's work, receiving many blessings from Him, and bearing abundant spiritual fruits that save many souls; and then let us all meet our Lord in great joy.

If, by any chance, you feel something stifling and suffocating in your hearts as you are carrying on with your lives of faith, and you find that you only feel empty inwardly while serving the Lord outwardly, then surely this is because your hearts love the world, and therefore there is no love of the Father in them. There is no other reason. Our Lord wants to dwell in us and walk with us.

If we love the world, God the Holy Spirit in us becomes jealous and angry at us, saying, "I am in

you and yet you are not satisfied by Me?" Because the Master in us is the Holy Spirit, when our Master gets angry and is hurt, then our outward men are bound to get hurt also, and as a result, we get angry and impatient at even the slightest thing, and we become hardened and spiritually blind. As such, we must cast aside our hearts' love for the world, ask for what we need by faith, and fulfill our role as stewards by managing what we have wisely. We must also love Christ, live the blessed life that receives many spiritual and material blessings from Him and shares them with others until the day we meet our Lord.

If this love for the world creeps into your hearts or my heart, then let us get rid of it regularly. It seems that we would have to do this at least once a week. While once saved, we are forever saved, we still need to frequently filter out such sediments from our hearts. It is bound to



happen that the love for this world or the three lusts of the flesh would arise in our hearts. In our hearts, there are the residues of our love for this world; this is not something that is unique only to you and me, but everyone is like this.

Given this, how could we then carry on with our lives of faith? Just as our houses are clean because we sweep and mop everyday, it is by cleaning our hearts from the love of this world that we can continue to lead our lives of faith. Before every Passover Feast came around, the Israelites had to remove leaven from their houses (Exodus 12:15). The Lord admonishes us, *“Take heed and beware of the leaven of the Pharisees and the Sadducees”* (Matthew 16:6). He warns us that we should stay away from legalism and secularism. If we allow our hearts to love this world constantly, even a littel bit of such leaven will spoil all our hearts, and we will end up facing His Judgment.

Therefore, we need to sweep out such love of this world from our hearts; think about how the Lord has saved us, how this Lord Savior has blessed us, what pleases Him, and for what purpose He has saved us; and though we may not be able to do great things, do what pleases the Lord, even if it is small. We should then meet the Lord.

## **Beware of the Beauty of the Daughters of Men**

Let us all now turn to Genesis 6:1-4: *“Now it came to pass, when men began to multiply on the face of the earth, and daughters were born to them, that the sons of God saw the daughters of men, that they were beautiful; and they took wives for themselves of all whom they chose. And the LORD said, ‘My Spirit shall not strive with*



*man forever, for he is indeed flesh; yet his days shall be one hundred and twenty years.' There were giants on the earth in those days, and also afterward, when the sons of God came in to the daughters of men and they bore children to them. Those were the mighty men who were of old, men of renown."*

This age now appears as though it is an age when Genesis 6 is replayed once again. God is telling us that now, this age is like Noah's age, and the end is nearing this world: "How does the end of the world come? What happens in the end times? What must we now be careful?" I believe that such are what our God is telling us.

In the days of Noah, men began to multiply on the face of the earth, and sin had become widespread. And the people of God, abandoning faith and being drunk by the world, had also become wicked and evil. So God could not leave the world as it was, and decided to judge it.

Why then, did the people of God go spiritually astray? It was because the sons of God, seeing the beauty of the daughters of men, took whom they liked as their wives (Genesis 6:2). For this reason, God said, "My Spirit shall not strive with man forever." What was so important about this that God would say that He would not be with man forever? We need to ponder on why God would leave the people of those days. And we need to also contemplate on what exactly this passage means.

God had abhorred it so much that His sons would be intoxicated by the beauty of the daughters of men. All human beings are the descendants of Adam. These descendants of Adam were all born as piles of sin, but among them, there were those who had been born again and those who had not. As time went by, this earth came to be populated by many people, but because many of them did not believe but instead



went over to the world, mankind was divided into two kinds: those who believed in God and followed Him, and the worldly people who belonged to the world. By Noah's time, sin was so widespread throughout this earth that even the sons of God were bewitched by the beauty of the daughters of men. This is the reason why God separated Himself from mankind and judged this earth.

We need to understand here what is meant by "the beauty of the daughters of men," and why we have to be particularly attentive to this passage. The passage from Genesis 6 that we are considering here provides a description of the world just before God rendered His judgment of flood on this earth. So we can construe that this age was very similar to today's age, as it is written, *"For this they willfully forget: that by the word of God the heavens were of old, and the earth standing out of water and in the water, by*

*which the world that then existed perished, being flooded with water. But the heavens and the earth which are now preserved by the same word, are reserved for fire until the day of judgment and perdition of ungodly men"* (2 Peter 3:5-7).

So what does it mean when it says here that the sons of God were captivated by the daughters of men and married them, and that for this, they were abandoned and judged by God? We first need to understand what this "beauty of the daughters of men" is. The beauty of the daughters of men literally means the beauty of body. The sons of God, in other words, were drunk by the physical beauty of women.

The Bible tells us that in the ancient times of the Old Testament also, many people had perished from following such physical beauty and sexual attraction. The beauty of the daughters of men refers to such elements that



express physical attractiveness as tall heights, long legs, lean bodies, shapely curves, voluptuous figures, large eyes, high noses, sexy lips, and so forth. So seeing such features pleasing to the eyes of the flesh, the sons of God were intoxicated by them and took the daughters of men as their wives.

Here then, in this age and time, we need to examine carefully whether we, today's sons of God who have been born again by believing in the gospel of the water and the Spirit, can also be attracted to the beauty of the daughters of men and be captivated by them. Not knowing ourselves well, we may say that this is not how we are, but we need to seriously examine ourselves to see whether we are not in fact being unwittingly drawn to the beauty of the daughters of men, and we need to find out what we must do.

Is it then possible for the sons of God to see and fall into the beauty of the daughters of men? This is quite possible. In fact, from a spiritual perspective, such beauty is nothing. When we dig into their fundamental selves in biblical perspective, we discover that such physical beauty in fact amounts to nothing. But when we do not have this biblical knowledge, the world looks beautiful, and we face so many temptations so often.

The people of this world prefer long legs to short legs, and they consider long, thin, and yet toned bodies with shapely curves as beautiful. They are so attracted to such features that these are all that occupies their minds, despite the fact when we really think about it, such superficial attributes actually amount to nothing. Just as Cleopatra ultimately succumbed to her death and thus to nothingness, and just as beautiful flowers dry up and wilt away in time, no matter how one



may be the most beautiful woman in this entire world, when she, too, gets old and dies, everything ends all in vain. For even the most attractive people in this world, the praise for their beauty is only fleeting, lasting no more than a few years of their prime.

In the Old Testament, the sons of God saw how beautiful the daughters of men were, and being drunk by this beauty, they took these daughters as their wives and lived with them. In other words, the sons of God had fallen head over heels into the daughters of men, and had become one in body with them. What a great sin is it that they would fall into the beauty of the world that is bound to wilt away in the end and they themselves would tire of, and as a result abandon the everlasting Word of God?

Those who are not born again are still sinners even at their best. And no matter how beautiful they may be, the difference is only skin-deep.

We cannot even compare them to the born-again. When we look spiritually, it is the born-again who are the most beautiful. To still be captured by the daughters of men, whose souls have not yet been born again, is then a great mistake. The flesh may move our carnal minds, but the great mistake here is that even their spiritual minds were spoiled by their carnal lusts.

When I look at this present age, I feel that it is exactly the same as the Noah's age right before the great flood, when these sons of God were captivated by the daughters of men and took them as their wives. I wonder if such an age, when the sons of God were destroyed for succumbing to the beauty of the daughters of men, is none other than this very age that we are living in.

In times like this, when the people of God become one with so many people who have not been born again, God will be provoked to His



wrath. Such times, when the sons of God are attracted to the women who have not been born again (the daughters of God to the godless men), intermarry and intermingle, will surely come to this last age. As Jesus said, *“Nevertheless, when the Son of Man comes, will He really find faith on the earth?”* (Luke 18:8), I wonder if this is not how everyone is going to perish.

What about you? By any chance, are you not also attracted to such beauty of the world? If you really look into your hearts and confess yourselves honestly, you will likely have to admit this. Since we are only human, it is quite possible for us to have such thoughts, but we should consider it fortunate that we at least know that we have such desires. What is more frightening is the prospect of not realizing that we have such lust and love for the world even when we have them, for when in our ignorance we fall into the beauty of the daughters of men,

we may very well never be able to escape from it. If we know that we have such desires, then we will also be more careful. I am saying, in other words, that we should realize that we have this tendency, and that we should therefore be cautious about such carnal aspects.

Also, we must not be double-minded. As it is written in James 4:8, “Purify your hearts, you double-minded,” we cannot keep two hearts. We cannot serve both God and the world. We should love and honor each other within the bounds that are permitted by Him, and not be captivated by and fall into the beauty of those who have not been born again. If this happens, then it will be the end of the world.

Just how many beauty pageants do we have in these days? They all singularly look at only outward appearances, crowning long-legged, shapely figured, and tall women with pretty faces as beauty queens.



Genesis tells us that the sons of God took the daughters of men and bore children, that these descendants were giants, and that there were many of them in the world. It also tells us that they were mighty men of renown. They were, in other words, tall, strong, and handsome.

How about the current of this age? Since we, too, are only human, we also like tall and well-built men, and beautiful and slender women, but this age puts so much emphasis on such superficial aspects that it is akin to the age when these giants roamed the earth. We, too, have eyes, and so we see all that there is to see; since we have ears, we hear all that there is to hear; since we have heads, we think all that there is to think; since we have minds of our own, we feel all that there is to feel; and since it is in the environment of this world that we live, we sense all that there is to sense, irrespective of whether we believe in the gospel of the water and the

Spirit.

Therefore, if we lose our hearts to such beauty of the daughters of men, then there is no way that we can properly lead our lives of faith. Especially for you and I who are living in this age, such temptations of the world are even more enticing, and it takes a lot of effort to reject them.

For those of us who are doing God's work, the greatest enemy is the beauty of the daughters of men—that is, the beauty of this world. Far more fearsome than any attack with guns and swords is this beauty of the daughters of men that we see with our eyes, the beauty of the world. This is why our Lord is telling us here that if we fall into such beauty, our faith will end there and we will face destruction inevitably.

Therefore, we must ensure that our hearts are sanctified. If, by any chance, we come to have such lustful hearts, we must sanctify our hearts and right them once again by believing in the



gospel of the water and the Spirit.

My dear fellow believers, just how much is the beauty of the world that is all around us confusing us? There are so many temptations of the world looking for every opportunity to sneak in through the slightest cracks in our eyes, hearts, thoughts, and minds. These are not far away from us, but they are all around us. We have to engrave in our hearts once again that if we follow them to the world, we will end up surrendering ourselves to the lust of the flesh, and thus fail to fulfill the precious work that serves the gospel of the water and the Spirit. We must neither follow the world, nor mingle with it.

Because we are now living in such a fast age, virtually everything is easily accessible for us. In the old days, it took a long time for a rumor to spread around, but nowadays, it only takes a few hours for everyone to find out what happened last night. Only a generation ago, it used to take a

full year for fashion to spread around and fade away, but now, fashion comes and goes by minutes. From TV, newspapers, and the Internet, we can easily access detailed information on virtually everything, from such mundane questions as which pop singer wore what clothes, shoes, and accessories and sang what songs, to what the latest fashion is, and to how politics, society, and the economy, both domestic and international, are developing. It is precisely because individuals know so much information that this age is called as the age of information flood. It is in such an age, such a time of so much confusion, transition, and rapid development, that we are all now living.

The entire civilization of the whole world is overflowing with the beauty of the daughters of men. Because of this, there are areas in which we the born-again also have already fallen into the beauty of the daughters of men to a considerable



extent, without even realizing. Since we are following the lust of the flesh and falling deeply into it, to an extent that would have been unimaginable before, we do not realize our own conditions, and all of us find ourselves, without any exception, firmly lodged in this culture—what is even worse, furthermore, is that unable to recognize this, we are falling even deeper into the beauty of the daughters of the world.

If those who have been born again through the gospel of the water and the Spirit drift toward the flesh and are captivated by the beauty of the daughters of men, of those who have not been born again, they will ultimately be destroyed, for God is no longer with them. Therefore, the Bible warns us, *“For it is impossible for those who were once enlightened, and have tasted the heavenly gift, and have become partakers of the Holy Spirit, and have tasted the good word of God and the powers of the age to come, if they*

*fall away, to renew them again to repentance, since they crucify again for themselves the Son of God, and put Him to an open shame” (Hebrews 6:4-6).* The Scripture continues to say that such people will surely be burned.

Today’s Scripture passage, therefore, tells us that we must not allow the lust of the flesh to overcome us so easily, nor be captivated by the beauty of the daughters of men, and points out what we must be careful of as you carry on with our lives of faith.

What, then, must we be most wary of and avoid the most? We must avoid from being captivated by the beauty of the daughters of men, becoming one with them, falling into the lust of the flesh, and thereby ending up discarding God’s work. This is what we must be most careful of in our hearts.

Do you know just how Noah’s time was before the coming of the flood? That age, just



like this present age, was a very prosperous one. Some countries are now quite prosperous, and along with this prosperity came the single-minded obsession with superficial beauty, utter prevalence of sin, the hardening of its people's hearts, and sexual immorality. But just as Noah's age had also been a prosperous one right until the very moment of its destruction, there is a great possibility that this is what will happen to this age.

Throughout the whole world, this culture of shameless hedonism is highly developed and widespread, through every conceivable medium from movies to videos, songs, games, and the Internet. Even in less prosperous countries, this industry that advocates the enjoyment of the beauty of the flesh is highly advanced and booming, while many people continue suffer from hunger. Just take a look at the picture of this age that reminds everyone of the age of

Noah's flood. The Bible is telling us have the faith of Noah, who, by knowing his age and believing in the gospel of the water and the Spirit, had saved his life as well as his family's lives.

Today's world is reserved for fire until the Day of Judgment and perdition of ungodly men (2 Peter 3:7). In other words, God will burn this world with fire. How is this age then? It is beyond any doubt whatsoever that this age is now approaching its own destruction. It is an age that as a whole is utterly and thoroughly filled with the beauty of the daughters of men. And it is an age when the sons of God are possibly being captivated by their beauty.

The sad reality is that even those who ostensibly claim to believe in God and follow Him are, far from bearing witness to unbelievers, actually being fascinated and proselytized by them. We must remember here what the Lord



said to us, that He would come when the times are such that the sons of God, far from preaching the gospel to the unbelievers, are instead proselytized by them, and, saturated in their flesh, are following the world. When this happens, the end of the world will come.

We, too, must recognize and realize that we may possibly be falling into such corruption, and that if this happens, we will be destroyed then. We must be careful of this kind of temptation; and until the day our Lord returns, we must maintain our guards, remain awake, pray, and keep our hearts. We must not follow the beauty of those who are yet to be born again, and be tempted by the world to abandon the work of God. We must realize that we have to keep our faith in the gospel of the water and the Spirit in our hearts and do the work of God until the last days, not be captured by the world and follow the lust of the flesh. We must sanctify our hearts by

believing in the gospel of the water and the Spirit, and diligently keep our hearts always clean.

We are the sons of God. We must not be captivated by the beauty of the daughters of men. We must not follow it. All of us, our brothers, sisters, and the servants of God alike, must not follow it. If we follow it, this will only mean our destruction. If the born-again follow the beauty of the world, not only will they face their own destruction, but the more there are such people, the sooner the judgment will come to this world. There will be, in other words, no more hope in this world.

We must be aware of such weaknesses in us and be careful, realizing that it is more than possible for us to fall into the sinful world. And having faith, we must not, in this age and time when the Lord's return is imminent, be deceived by the temptations and deceptions of the world,



nor must we follow the lust of the flesh and forsake everything. Having faith in the fact that we have been born again of water and the Spirit in Jesus Christ, we must live in purity. And we must fortify our faith so that we may not fall into the beauty of this world; we must instead struggle against it not to ultimately end up betraying our Lord.

It is my sincerest hope and prayer that in these times, when the end is so near, no one will ever end up abandoning his faith. Once having been born again, you must not betray the Lord, your Savior, nor follow the beauty of the daughters of men.

To follow the daughters of men does not just mean men following women and women following men. Rather, to follow the fame, power, wealth, or beauty of this world is to follow the beauty of the daughters of men.

Therefore, instead of just following this

world's wealth, fame, physical beauty, or all that is beautiful in this world, we must remember that the Lord has given us the great faith in the gospel of the water and the Spirit, keep this faith, thank God, and sanctify and keep our hearts always. ☒



# CHAPTER 2

---

## SERMON 5

(1 John 2:18-29)

“Who Are  
The Enemies of Christ?”



Contents



## Who Are The Enemies of Christ?

<1 John 2:18-29>

“Little children, it is the last hour; and as you have heard that the Antichrist is coming, even now many antichrists have come, by which we know that it is the last hour. They went out from us, but they were not of us; for if they had been of us, they would have continued with us; but they went out that they might be made manifest, that none of them were of us. But you have an anointing from the Holy One, and you know all things. I have not written to you because you do not know the truth, but because you know it, and that no lie is of the truth. Who is a liar but he who denies that Jesus is the Christ? He is

antichrist who denies the Father and the Son. Whoever denies the Son does not have the Father either; he who acknowledges the Son has the Father also. Therefore let that abide in you which you heard from the beginning. If what you heard from the beginning abides in you, you also will abide in the Son and in the Father. And this is the promise that He has promised us—eternal life. These things I have written to you concerning those who try to deceive you. But the anointing which you have received from Him abides in you, and you do not need that anyone teach you; but as the same anointing teaches you concerning all things, and is true, and is not a lie, and just as it has taught you, you will abide in Him. And now, little children, abide in Him, that when He appears, we may have confidence and not be ashamed before Him at His coming. If you know that He is righteous, you know that



**everyone who practices righteousness is born of Him.”**

The Apostle John said, *“Who is a liar but he who denies that Jesus is the Christ? He is antichrist who denies the Father and the Son”* (1 John 2:22). That is to say, “The one who denies that Jesus is Christ is the very antichrist who denies the Father and the Son.”

Jesus is the King of kings, the Creator of the whole universe. And He especially made us and saved us from all our sins. To do so, He came to this world in the likeness of sinful flesh, was baptized, died on the Cross, and resurrected from the dead. Therefore, the one who denies this salvation is the one who doesn't believe that Jesus is God, our Lord, and our Savior. And such a person is the very enemy of Christ. Jesus is the King of kings, the Creator of the entire universe,

the Prophet, and the High Priest of Heaven. The one who doesn't believe in this Truth is the enemy of God. The Apostle John said that such people had left God's Church.

1 John 2:19 states, *“They went out from us, but they were not of us; for if they had been of us, they would have continued with us; but they went out that they might be made manifest, that none of them were of us.”* In John's day, there were people who once professing to believe, went out in a group from God's Church. John declared that they might be made manifest by doing so, that none of them were of God's people. They were liars and the enemies of God, for they didn't believe that Jesus was Christ. Jesus is the Lord of all creation, the Prophet, the High Priest, and the Savior who has delivered us from all our sins through the gospel of the water and the Spirit. Those who didn't believe in this Truth went out from the saints in his day. He said that



they would have continued with the saints if they had truly believed in the Truth.

Those who have received the remission of sins love to stay together with the saints, even though they are insufficient. Staying together doesn't make them tired. If someone were to feel tired while staying together, it would mean that he does not love God and that he is pursuing his own lusts of flesh, not being in unity with God's people.

God's people also feel tired when they are with those who only seek their own desires of flesh, apart from God's plan. How pleasant is it when we share one mind? We eat together, chat together, and outwardly reveal our joys, angers, sorrows and pleasures. Where else can you find such a good and happy relationship in this secular world? Because we are of one mind, we, the born-again feel comfortable and happy whenever we gather together. We can freely

speak against people who are against God, and we comfort each other by realizing other's insufficiencies when we are disappointed at our own insufficiencies. However, it is so difficult for the born-again to stay with those who don't believe, for they are His enemies who try to destroy Him.

Through his Epistles, the Apostle John expressed his heartache over the loss of some who had gone out from God's Church. Even though they are manifested as the enemies of God, the antichrists, he had a pang of sorrow because they were once with him. We also feel heartache, pain and sorrow when we find unbelievers in God's Church while all its other members are born again of water and the Spirit, and are pleased with each other for their salvations and eternal lives.

John spoke to the saints about the Truth once again. They knew the Truth already, but he



wanted to remind them with the Truth so as not to become God's enemies by standing firm on it. And he preached the Truth again so that if there had been some unbelievers, they would have turned around from their evil ways. And the last reason why he reiterated the Truth again and again was that he wanted to distinguish the believers from the unbelievers with the Truth. All these are the main contents of his Epistles.

In I John chapter 1, he mentioned the light and the darkness. He clearly declared, "*God is light and in Him is no darkness at all*" (1 John 1:5). However, there were some church members who abode in the darkness. They did wrong, hated and fought each other while seeking their own personal desires. Therefore, John admonished them to admit and confess their wrongdoings. He said that it was a great evil for them not to confess their wrongdoings before God and their fellow believers.

From chapter 2 to 4, John talks about love: What true love is and why we have to love each other. And then, he talks about the unbelievers, the antichrists, and the enemies of God in the perspective of love. In chapter 5, John the Apostle mentioned what the true gospel was and that he had preached it from the beginning. The gospel that he had preached from the beginning is the gospel of the water and the Spirit. He declared that Jesus Christ was the Savior who came not only by water or blood, but by water, blood, and the Holy Spirit (1 John 5:6-8). And he said this was Truth that came from God.

In short, he says that true believers must love each other and confess their wrongdoings, and that they come to know the love of God by doing so. On the other hand, he teaches us that there are enemies of Christ, the antichrists, and he talks about who they are.

John knew Jesus Christ in detail for he



followed Jesus most closely. This is why from the early days of the church, John's Gospel acquired the symbol of "the eagle" among the four creatures seen by Ezekiel in vision (Ezekiel 1 and 10). Matthew, the Gospel writer, says, "Jesus is King." Mark describes Jesus as the Son of God and the Savior who came to this world to serve mankind. The Gospel writer Luke puts an emphasis on the humanity of Jesus: "Jesus, though He is the benevolent God, came to this world as the Son of Man. He emblazes all humans by sympathizing with our weaknesses." On the other hand, the Gospel according to John is called as "the Gospel of the eagle" because it shows a keen description and highly spiritual level of God's will. Through his Gospel and the Epistles, John wrote the gospel of the water and the Spirit in detail, explained sin in an intense argument, and let us clearly know the difference between the children of God and those of the

devil.

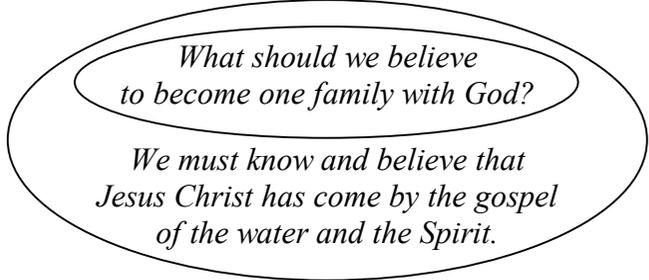
The Apostle John said, "*Who is a liar but he who denies that Jesus is the Christ? He is antichrist who denies the Father and the Son. Whoever denies the Son does not have the Father either; he who acknowledges the Son has the Father also*" (1 John 2:22-23). He said, "*Whoever denies that Jesus is the Christ is God's enemy and the antichrist.*" So, he continued, "*Whoever denies the Son does not have the Father either; he who acknowledges the Son has the Father also. Therefore let that abide in you which you heard from the beginning. If what you heard from the beginning abides in you, you also will abide in the Son and in the Father*" (1 John 2:23-24).

There rose so many heretic groups in the Early Church Christianity who were the groups of antichrist, the enemies of God. This proves that there were many servants of Satan even in the



church of the Apostolic Age. This is why the Apostle John warned in today's Scripture passage that "he who denies that Jesus is the Christ is the very antichrist." Paul the Apostle also indicated that there were false brethren who came into the church secretly (Galatians 2:4). They became the antichrists and the enemies of God for they didn't believe in the gospel of the water and the Spirit. Therefore, God's servants in the Early Church warned the saints to watch out for them.

## **Believers in the Gospel of the Water and the Spirit Are One Family**



*What should we believe  
to become one family with God?*

*We must know and believe that  
Jesus Christ has come by the gospel  
of the water and the Spirit.*

For us not to love God and not to love man—this is the greatest sin. The Bible says that the love of many will grow cold in the last days. This means that there will be times when we can barely stand to live because of the severity of human relationships. However, there is the gift of God's grace in His love, which delivers us from all our sins and gives us new lives. And He has given us the righteous, His Church, and allows us

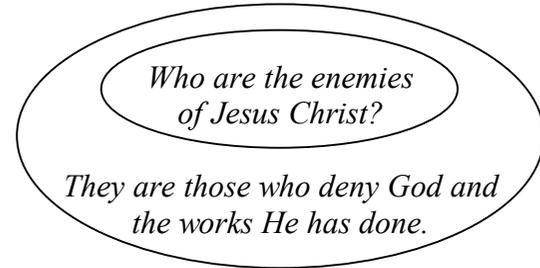


to live under His spiritual blessings. God's grace and the Truth abide in the gospel of the water and the Spirit.

We have become one family with God and the born-again saints. And we love the weaker ones more in God's Church. How about the parents' concern over their children? Don't they take care of their weaker children than the healthy ones? The healthy kids grow well by themselves, but the weaker ones need to be taken care of. Likewise, ministers and workers of God also take care of the weaker members more as God the Father does.

Moreover, we are concerned about not only our brothers and sisters in Christ, but also those who are not yet saved, for we have the love of the gospel that saved us from all the sins of the world. We have come to love them for Jesus has given us His love in our hearts. We are the people who love the Truth, and are to live a life

of love in Christ.



*“Little children, it is the last hour; and as you have heard that the Antichrist is coming, even now many antichrists have come, by which we know that it is the last hour. They went out from us, but they were not of us; for if they had been of us, they would have continued with us; but they went out that they might be made manifest, that none of them were of us. But you have an anointing from the Holy One, and you know all things. I have not written to you because you do not know the truth, but because you know it, and that no lie is of the truth” (1 John 2:18-21).*



John the Apostle is now talking to the family of God who are of the same faith, calling them ‘little children,’ ‘young men’ or ‘fathers.’ God’s Church, where the born-again people of God live, is the family of God and His Kingdom.

The Lord warns us that many antichrists have come into this world. They are the enemies of Christ, and do not believe that Jesus is the Son of God. John the Apostle pointed out that they didn’t belong to the Truth, and that they eventually quit the church because they did not believe that Jesus was the Son of God. They left God’s Church without having faith in the gospel of the water and the Spirit, and therefore, were not of God from the beginning.

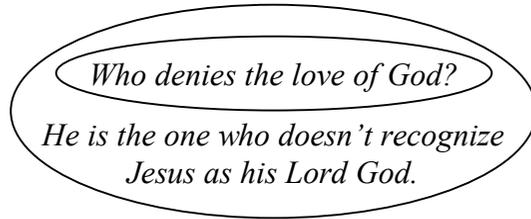
We cannot live together with people who have different faiths from ours. What if we come to live with a stranger? Can we put trust in him unconditionally? We would feel nervous until we have true confidence in him. Likewise, we can’t

love God’s enemies who stand against the love of Christ. Even though the Lord told us to love our enemies, this is not the case.

Antichrists are the enemies even to us, the saints. They persecute and ignore the believers in the gospel of the water and the Spirit. We the saints really hope that they will abide in God’s love, and live together with us in the same faith. But, until they return to God’s love and believe in the gospel of the water and the Spirit, the Truth of salvation, they are no more than the enemies of God and of us. This is why we have to reject them. Those who have received the love of God are our family to be loved. We have to keep in mind that we are one family in the gospel of the water and the Spirit.



## Who Are the Enemies of Jesus Christ?



Jesus Christ has saved all believers from all their sins by being baptized and shedding His blood. This is the love of Christ. But there are His enemies who dare reject His unconditional love. They are the people who don't believe in the gospel of the water and the Spirit, and are the enemies to the believers in Jesus Christ. Therefore, we have to know that the Devil is not the only antichrist; among the Christians, all those who reject the perfect love of Christ and stand against Him are the enemies of Jesus

Christ.

Therefore, 1 John 2:18 states, *“Little children, it is the last hour; and as you have heard that the Antichrist is coming, even now many antichrists have come, by which we know that it is the last hour.”* Here, the Antichrist means the enemy of Jesus Christ. It doesn't refer to the Antichrist in Revelations chapter 13, but refers to all those who do not believe that Jesus is the Son of God, and who don't accept the gospel of the water and the Spirit.

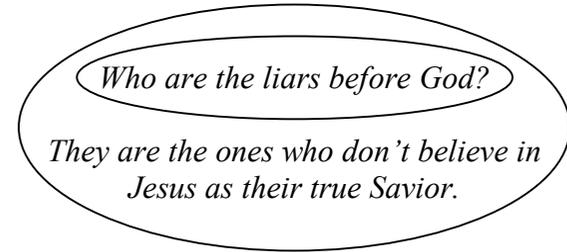
It seems that there was a group of people who left God's Church because they didn't believe that Jesus Christ was the Son of God. This can be deduced from 1 John 2:19 that states, *“They went out from us, but they were not of us; for if they had been of us, they would have continued with us; but they went out that they might be made manifest, that none of them were of us.”* A band of unbelievers, so to speak, left the church where



the Apostle John had preached the gospel, and he called them the antichrists. He said that if they had had the same faith as ours, they would have continued with us: but they went out that they might be made manifest, that none of them were of us, and that none of them had our same faith.

The Apostle Paul also continued to speak about the antichrists, that is, the enemies of Jesus Christ. Such people still exist until now. What need would they have had to quit God's Church if they had the same faith of John the Apostle? If so, they would not have left the Church of God. But it was to manifest the fact that they didn't share the same faith with John. In this age and time, people who believe in the gospel of the water and the Spirit need not quit God's Church. If there are some who have left His Church, it is just to manifest that their faith is different from our faith that believes in the gospel of the water and the Spirit.

## Those Who Lie to God Are the Ones Who Don't Believe in the Truth



1 John 2:22 states, “*Who is a liar but he who denies that Jesus is the Christ? He is antichrist who denies the Father and the Son.*” Who denies that Jesus is the Christ? He is the one who doesn't know who Jesus Christ is.

What do the words ‘Jesus Christ’ mean? First of all, ‘Christ’ means ‘the anointed One.’ In the Old Testament, the kings, the priests, and the prophets were to be anointed. Therefore, this means that Jesus is the Savior who has all three



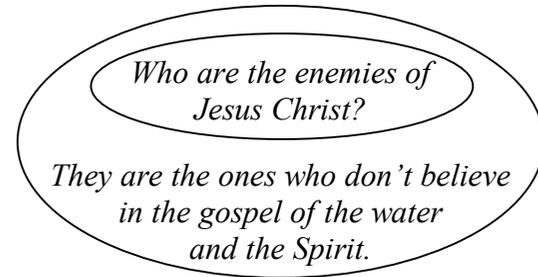
duties: Jesus is God, the King of kings, and the Lord of all hosts; He is the Savior and the High Priest of Heaven who has blotted out all our sins with His baptism and His bloodshed on the Cross; He is the Prophet who has taught us all, from the beginning to the end of His will. He was faithful to all these three duties.

Now, we come to know who the antichrists are. They are those who don't believe that Jesus is the Son of God, who is in charge of these three duties: the King, the High Priest of Heaven, and the Prophet. Such unbelievers who deny the Father and the Son are the enemies of Jesus Christ.

To fulfill the will of God the Father, Jesus Christ had silently received all mockeries, insults and indignities from the people. Thus He gave us His infinite love. True Christians are the ones who believe in God and the works Jesus has done, and share the same faith of His love of

salvation in the gospel of the water and the Spirit.

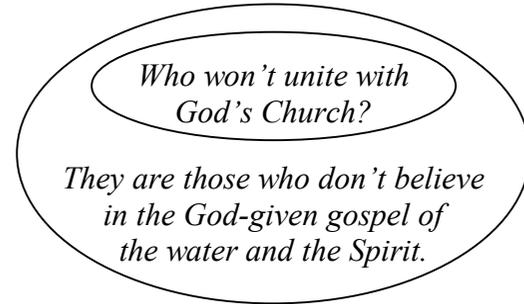
But the Devil and his children do not try to abide in the love of Christ; they rather reject and insult it. Those who deny God the Father and reject that Jesus is the Savior are the enemies of Christ. And the people who follow the false teachers who are not born again are the very antichrists. They have become the enemies of Jesus Christ for they don't believe Jesus who is the Savior, the King of kings, the Alpha and the Omega, and the abundant Giver of love, life, salvation, wisdom, grace and all blessings.



Today's Scripture passage says that the antichrists are the ones who don't believe in the gospel of the water and the Spirit. Keep in your mind that they are the enemies of God and the foes to the true Christians. That they don't stay with us shows that they basically don't believe in Jesus and are therefore His enemies.

The enemies of Jesus Christ are the ones who don't believe in the gospel of the water and the Spirit in their hearts. People of this world are prone to become Jesus Christ's enemies if they don't accept Him as their true Savior through the gospel of the water and the Spirit. The Bible states, "*Woe to you when all men speak well of you, for so did their fathers to the false prophets*" (Luke 6:26). If the worldly people praise you, you will end up an enemy of the Lord. People of this world would hate us if we believed in His love and followed the Truth. It is natural for them to pay compliments to those

who don't believe in the gospel of the water and the Spirit. Therefore, God clearly tells such unbelievers, "You are the very enemies to Me."



In this present age, there are people who have left God's Church. They might justify their choice for several reasons, but the truth is that there is only one reason when they quit the Church of God, the body of Christ. And it is because they don't believe in the gospel of the water and the Spirit, the Truth of salvation that the Lord has given. Those who know they have



become one in God's family by believing in the true gospel can never betray Jesus Christ. Of course, they may sometimes quarrel with each other, but none of them stomps out of God's Church.

It is because of the problem of their faiths that they depart silently from God's Church. It is not because they are weak that they do so. Rather, they are so strong in their own wills or thoughts that they don't believe in the gospel of the water and the Spirit, and stand against it. We see that the weaker and more insufficient saints in God's Church rely more on Jesus Christ and His Church. As if children rely on their parents, the children of God rely on His Church. It is because they don't believe in the gospel of the water and the Spirit that the unbelievers come to leave God's Church. How about the state of their spirits? Their souls feel uncomfortable while abiding in God's Church for they have sins in

their hearts even though they profess to believe in Jesus. So, they come to conclude that, "This is not my place to stay and not my home. These people are not my family. My faith is quite different from that of those who believe in the gospel of the water and the Spirit. I'd rather go to the place where people approve of my faith. It's too hard to stay here anymore."

This is how they head out to the world from the Lord's Church by not submitting their thoughts before His Word. They eventually depart from God's Church by not believing in the gospel of the water and the Spirit that the Bible speaks about. Our Lord, the Prophet has already taught us the true gospel for our salvation. But, they have not been saved from all their sins because they don't believe in and follow the gospel of the water and the Spirit as it is. Those enemies of God reject the love of Christ and end up running away from God's Church because



they don't attempt to keep His love in their hearts; because they don't admit the Word of salvation; and because they don't believe that Jesus is the Savior. The only reason for them to secede from God's Church is that they don't believe in the gospel of the water and the Spirit. They, as a result, degrade themselves to the servants of Satan, owing to their own faiths that are built on their own thoughts.

They cannot but secede from God's Church because they are the enemies of God. There is no other reason than that. They became miserable people who could not but stand against God and His saints when they left His Church.

We cannot forget each name and face of our family members no matter how long we haven't seen them. In Korea, there are two great folk-festivals in which all family members gather together at the head house of a family. So, during those times, it is natural that all Koreans strive to

return to their parents' houses through the overwhelming traffic jams all over the nation. Why do they do so? They miss each other because they love each other by the name of family. There are still so many dispersed families in Korea owing to the Korean War (1950-1953). Half a century has passed, but they don't give up hope in meeting their dispersed family members again. How they yearn for their families and hometowns again! It is said, "Blood is thicker than water." All this is because they are one family.

None of the born-again can live alone. They should meet their spiritual families someday and share the God-given joy with each other. Therefore, if someone leaves his family of his own accord, it means that he doesn't think them as his family anymore. And those who remain in God's Church must know that the reason why such people could not but secede from His



Church is because of their rejection of Christ's love.

*Who are the enemies of Jesus Christ?*

*They are those who don't believe that Jesus Christ is the Son of God.*

Now, John the Apostle deals with the enemies of Christ in detail. Who are the enemies of Jesus Christ? He answers, "They are those who don't believe that Jesus Christ is the Son of God. They are the antichrists and the enemies of Jesus." He said, in other words, "If one believes that Jesus is the Son of God, he also believes in the Father who sent Him. But if he doesn't believe so, he doesn't believe in God the Father for he doesn't believe in the Son. Therefore, such a person is a liar and an antichrist." It is written that lots of

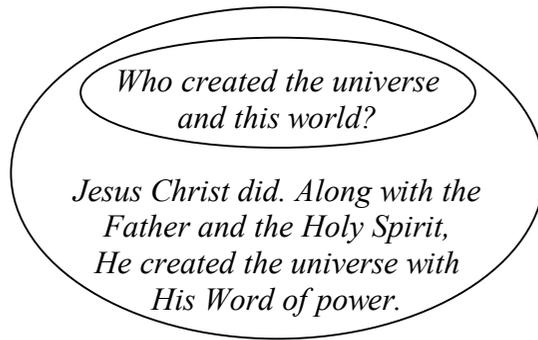
antichrists will rise in the last days, and this has been realized in Christian communities from the Early Church to today's Christianity.

You may think, "How dare you say that among Christians, there are those who don't believe that Jesus is the Son of God! Every Christian believes so." But, unfortunately, this is not the case. We see that the Christian faith of the Western European countries has already been broken down. They are the countries where Christianity once had its peak during the last four-five centuries. Why did the faith of the Western Christians end up collapsing? If we examine their current faith, we can find that so many of them do not believe that Jesus is the Son of God. They can't believe all the Word of God because they don't believe in this basic Truth.

Also in the Early Church, there were many who didn't believe that Jesus was the Son of God.



Do you believe that He is the Son of God? For the believers, it is easier to believe than to breathe. But, for a distrustful person, nothing can make him believe. Such a person becomes the enemy of Christ owing to his unbelief, and eventually quits the Church of God.



In every country, there are Christian denominations or sects that do not believe in Jesus as the Son of God. Their members profess Christianity publicly, even though they don't actually believe that Jesus is God Himself and

the Son of God. They assert, "Jesus is not God, but a human being. He is merely a son of God, but not the Creator. He is a human being just like us." They deny His Divinity completely. They say that God is only one Person who is called 'Jehovah,' and there is no other God such as the Son or anything. What a wild idea this is! They must be ignorant of the word 'Jehovah.'

'Jehovah' means 'I am who I am.' God identified Himself as 'the One who exists by Himself,' and therefore, He is not the One made by some other being. Therefore, those who don't believe in Jesus as the Son of God are the ones who don't believe in God, the Father of Jesus Christ.

God the Father said, "*This is My beloved Son, in whom I am well pleased*" (Matthew 3:17). Therefore, if someone admits Jesus to be God, it means that he admits the Father also. On the other hand, if someone doesn't believe in the



Son, it means that he also denies the Father. But, unfortunately, a lot of pseudo-Christians rose up, who have this sort of weird faith. Therefore, John the Apostle started to explain who the antichrists were in detail.

Let us also think about that: “Do we really believe that Jesus Christ is the Son of God?” Yes, we believe so. But it might be impossible for those who don’t have the Holy Spirit in their hearts to believe this Truth. Jesus Christ is our true Savior. He is truly the Son of God. He really is the Creator. However, they can’t believe in Jesus as the Bible says, for the Scripture says, *“Now if anyone does not have the Spirit of Christ, he is not His” (Romans 8:9)*. They might admit that Jesus is the Son of God with their lips, but they might not be able to believe the Truth in their hearts when they don’t know Him to be their Lord, who has blotted out all their sins by the water, the blood, and the Spirit. Most

Christians, though they profess Jesus well with their lips, are actually skeptical about the Truth that Jesus died on the Cross and was resurrected again, when they try to believe in this plain Truth in their hearts.

Why is it so hard for them to believe? It is because they have not yet received the remission of their sins by believing in the gospel of the water and the Spirit. When we believe that Jesus has saved us from all our sins by receiving His baptism, dying on the Cross, and resurrecting in three days, we can easily believe that we are dead in union with Jesus and will rise again with Him because we have passed all our sins to Him by faith. But, those who don’t believe in the gospel of the water and the Spirit cannot believe the fact that they will die and rise again when they try to apply this Truth to themselves. If they try to believe this with their own wills, the more skeptical they become. One who does not have



the Spirit of Christ cannot believe that Jesus is the Son of God and God Himself.

In the Early Church Age, the Jews didn't believe that Jesus was the Son of God. They just thought of Him as a respectable person. Most of today's Israelites also think this. They don't accept Jesus as their Savior. This is why they have suffered so many hardships. But, they will believe that He is the Son of God in the last days. They will believe that Jesus is the only Savior who will protect them and lead them to Heaven, when the Antichrist comes and destroys Israel. Then, they will admit that Jesus is the Son of God, God Himself, the Savior, and the very Messiah to come.

In the church where John the Apostle ministered, there were people who didn't have the same faith as he had. They eventually left God's Church. John explained that their deed was to manifest that they didn't share the faith

with him. Therefore, he warned his fellow saints to be watchful against the antichrists, that is, the enemies of God, and their faith.

1 John 2:20 states, "*But you have an anointing from the Holy One, and you know all things.*" This passage means that anyone who has receive the remission of sins by believing in the gospel of the water and the Spirit receives the Holy Spirit, and that with the help of the Holy Spirit, he knows all things—that Jesus is the Son of God and God Himself, that His father is also our Father, and that He became our Savior and Lord by coming to this world, receiving His baptism to take all our sins, shedding His blood to death on the Cross, and rising again from the dead.

Now, you and I have been anointed in our hearts. Christ means 'the anointed One,' and now we are true Christians who have been anointed of the Holy Spirit. We, the born-again Christians, have received the remission of sins. As a result



of it, we received the indwelling of the Holy Spirit by believing in the gospel of the water and the Spirit, just like Jesus was anointed by the Holy Spirit. Therefore, we came to know all things: We came to know who Jesus is; who the Father of Jesus Christ is; what the gospel of the water and the Spirit is. We can now discern the true gospel from the false ones.

*What is the purpose for the Apostle John to write his first Epistle?*

*It is for those who know the Truth not to be deceived.*

Now, John the Apostle is asking what the purpose of his writing in 1 John is: *“I have not written to you because you do not know the truth, but because you know it, and that no lie is of the*

*truth” (1 John 2:21)*. When he says this passage, he implies that there are many unbelievers, in other words, the enemies of God in His Church. So, he warns that the saints should keep watching the enemies of God lest they may not be deceived. In short, the main topic of 1 John is for the true saints not to be deceived by the antichrists who came in God’s Church silently and abided among the born-again to deceive them.

*We should not become the enemies of Christ. Then, how can we prevent ourselves from becoming His enemy?*

*The only way for us not to become His enemy is to believe in the gospel of the water and the Spirit.*



1 John 2:22 says, “*Who is a liar but he who denies that Jesus is the Christ? He is antichrist who denies the Father and the Son.*” Who, the Bible says, is a liar? It is said that a liar is he who denies the Father and the Son. The one who denies that Jesus is Christ is the very antichrist and the liar.

Jesus, the Son of God and the King of kings, came to this world in the flesh of a man, and taught us all the Truth: He taught us the beginning and the end of the universe; how to receive the remission of sins; and how to be blessed or cursed. He has saved us from all our sins by being baptized by John the Baptist and by shedding His blood on the Cross. Therefore, those who deny that Jesus Christ became our true Savior by being baptized and shedding His blood, are the very antichrists. They are the very ones who deny the Father and the Son.

The Lord said, “*For God so loved the world*

*that He gave His only begotten Son, that whoever believes in Him should not perish but have everlasting life*” (John 3:16). However, there are those who deny this Truth. The word ‘to deny something’ means ‘not to believe something even though one knows it.’ Such a person is the very antichrist, that is, the enemy of Jesus Christ.

We have to believe in Jesus Christ. We should not stand against Him nor become His enemies. You sometimes may become an enemy of your friend or your family members. But, once you become an enemy of Jesus Christ, then you will receive eternal damnation from Him. There will be no way to recover your fate, and only calamity and curses will await you from the present life to the future life. This is why you should not become an enemy of Jesus Christ, and to prevent yourself from becoming so, you have to believe in Him: You have to believe that Jesus is Christ; that He came as the King, the Prophet,



and the High Priest; that He saved us through the gospel of the water and the Spirit. Whoever doesn't believe this cannot avoid becoming His enemy.

It is also written, *“But as many as received Him, to them He gave the right to become children of God, to those who believe in His name” (John 1:12)*. ‘To receive Him’ means ‘to believe in Him,’ while ‘to deny Him’ is ‘not believing in Him.’

He had given up His glory in Heaven, and became flesh to save us, mankind, from all our sins. During His 33 years of life on this earth, having sympathized with our weaknesses, He was baptized, crucified and resurrected from the dead to fulfill our salvation. How then, can we not believe in Him? By what reason can we deny Him? By what excellence are you made so arrogant to deny Him? I have no idea why the people of this world are too arrogant to believe in

Jesus.

We were doomed to go to hell, but Jesus had pity on us and offered Himself as the propitiation for our sins. To make us sinless and the children of God who will live happily forever with Him in His Kingdom, He came to this world, was baptized and died on the Cross, and resurrected from the dead to give us His perfect salvation. How then, can we not believe in Him? You may not believe in Him if you are so high and mighty that you are able to enter Heaven by yourself, but if not, I hope you believe in Him. This is the only way for you not to become His enemy.

*Who denies that Jesus  
is the Son of God?*

*The enemies of Jesus Christ do.  
They don't believe  
that He is God.*



1 John 2:23 says, “*Whoever denies the Son does not have the Father either; he who acknowledges the Son has the Father also.*”

If you don’t deny and believe that Jesus is the Son of God, and that He has saved us from all our sins by taking all our sins with His baptism, His death on the Cross, and His resurrection from the dead, then, the Father of Jesus becomes your Father. It is written, “*He who acknowledges the Son has the Father also.*” Therefore, you and I must first acknowledge the Son. Do you acknowledge that the Son of God is the true Savior of you and me? Do you believe that He has saved us by blotting out all our sins through the water, blood, and the Holy Spirit? —Yes.— If you don’t believe so, then you are an enemy of God and an antichrist.

Among today’s theologians, there are many who argue that Jesus is not God, and that believing in Him is not the only way to enter

Heaven. They insist that every religion has its own way to salvation. We call them the religious pluralists in Christianity. The dean of a famous theological seminary in Korea once asserted that Jesus did not actually resurrect. This means that He is not the Son of God and God Himself. Frankly speaking, such people are the ones who do not believe in Him. They think that Jesus was simply a revolutionist. Actually, there are many theologians who think of Jesus as a respectable revolutionist or an honorable philosopher. They are the ones who publicly deny Jesus Christ

Therefore, John the Apostle says in today’s scripture, “We really know the Truth. If there are some people who don’t believe in the Son of God, they are the very antichrists and God’s enemies who also deny the Father. They would go out to make manifest that none of them are of us. Because we know the Truth, we can learn a good lesson from such incidents, and should not



be deceived to share their faith by them.” We should know that we also will become the antichrists if we don’t believe in Jesus as the Son of God.

John the Apostle declares later, *“For whatever is born of God overcomes the world. And this is the victory that has overcome the world—our faith. Who is he who overcomes the world, but he who believes that Jesus is the Son of God? This is He who came by water and blood—Jesus Christ; not only by water, but by water and blood. And it is the Spirit who bears witness, because the Spirit is truth” (1 John 5:4-6).* Therefore, if we don’t believe in the gospel of the water and the Spirit, in other words, we will become the enemies of God.

*Which is the very gospel that the Apostles heard from the beginning?*

*It is the gospel that came by the water, the blood, and the Spirit.*

John says, *“Therefore let that abide in you which you heard from the beginning. If what you heard from the beginning abides in you, you also will abide in the Son and in the Father” (1 John 2:24).* Then, what is the thing that we heard from the beginning? To have the correct answer, we need to examine the passage of 1 John chapter 5 first.

I John 5:4-8 states, *“For whatever is born of God overcomes the world. And this is the victory that has overcome the world—our faith. Who is he who overcomes the world, but he who believes that Jesus is the Son of God? This is He who*



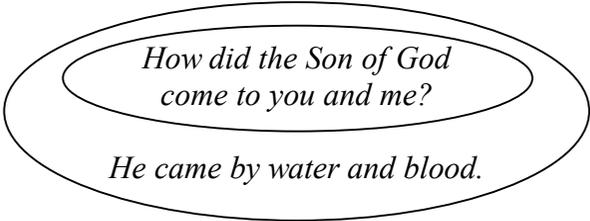
*came by water and blood—Jesus Christ; not only by water, but by water and blood. And it is the Spirit who bears witness, because the Spirit is truth. For there are three that bear witness in heaven: the Father, the Word, and the Holy Spirit; and these three are one. And there are three that bear witness on earth: the Spirit, the water, and the blood; and these three agree as one.”*

It is written, *“Who is he who overcomes the world, but he who believes that Jesus is the Son of God?”* This passage means that if Jesus is not truly the Son of God, all He had done on this earth for us would be nothing: That He was baptized, was crucified, and resurrected from the dead becomes null, and has nothing to do with us.

However, the true Word of God says that God the Father so loved the world that He gave His only begotten Son to save us from all our sins;

He made His Son to be baptized, crucified, and resurrected in order to blot out the sins of the world. For thus, He has delivered us from destruction and gave us eternal life. Therefore, we must believe that Jesus is the Son of God.

Jesus is not the Father God. There is the Father to Jesus. Jesus is the Son of God, but He is the Creator. He is the Creator God in His ability and status. However, He abandoned His glorious prestige, came to this world in the flesh of a man, and saved us with the water, the blood, and the Holy Spirit. *“This is He who came by water and blood—Jesus Christ.”* Jesus Christ has saved us by coming by water and blood.



*How did the Son of God  
come to you and me?*

*He came by water and blood.*



Then, what does it mean by “He came by water, blood, and the Spirit”? This means that Jesus Christ, the Son of God, was born to this world in the flesh of a man, received the baptism from John the Baptist to take all the sins of the world upon His body, and saved mankind from all our sins by dying on the Cross.

This is the salvation that Jesus has given us by coming by water and blood. Dear fellow Christians, how did Jesus come to us? Did He come by water and blood? Yes, He came by water and blood. Hallelujah!

Jesus Christ is our Savior. He came to us by the water, the blood, and the Spirit. So, the Bible says, *“Not only by water, but by water and blood. And it is the Spirit who bears witness, because the Spirit is truth.... And there are three that bear witness on earth: the Spirit, the water, and the blood; and these three agree as one.”*

What does the Holy Spirit bear witness to? He

bears witness to the Truth that Jesus came by water and blood to save us from all our sins. What do the water, the blood, and the Spirit bear witness to with one accord? The three bear witness to the Truth that we have been saved by Jesus’ baptism and His death on the Cross. When we have faith in the gospel of the water and the Spirit, in other words, when we believe in the Son of God who came by water and blood, we are sealed with the right faiths in our hearts by the Holy Spirit.

God the Father sends the gift of the Holy Spirit to those who receive the remission of sins by believing in Jesus, who came by water and blood, as their Savior. Therefore, it is written, *“And there are three that bear witness on earth: the Spirit, the water, and the blood.”* What is the evidence that bears witness to our salvation? What is the thing that we heard from the beginning? They are “the Spirit, the water, and



the blood.” When we believe in Jesus who came by water and blood, we can believe Him as the Son of God and our perfect Savior. When we believe that Jesus was baptized, died on the Cross, and resurrected from the dead to save us from all our sins, the Holy Spirit along with God the Father lets us know we have the right faiths in our hearts.

God the Father gives the gift of the Holy Spirit when we receive the remission of sins by faith. This is the anointing from the Holy Spirit. We are the ones who have been anointed by the Holy Spirit, and therefore, have become God’s children.

*What was the gospel that the Apostles handed down to us?*

*It was the gospel of the water and the Spirit that we now believe in.*

“Therefore let that abide in you which you heard from the beginning. If what you heard from the beginning abides in you, you also will abide in the Son and in the Father” (1 John 2:24). What is the thing that we heard from the beginning? It is Jesus Christ who came by the water, the blood, and the Holy Spirit. The Apostle John testifies that our salvation has been fulfilled by the water, the blood, and the Spirit. This is the gospel that the Apostle John preached from the beginning.

*What does Jesus’ baptism received from John mean?*

*It means that Jesus took all the sins of the world onto His body once and for all.*

The Apostle Peter also said, “There is also an



*antitype which now saves us—baptism (not the removal of the filth of the flesh, but the answer of a good conscience toward God), through the resurrection of Jesus Christ” (1 Peter 3:21).* Therefore, we can confirm that the original gospel which the Apostles preached from the beginning is the gospel of the water and the Spirit. It is the gospel of Jesus’ baptism and His blood on the Cross. When we believe this, we come to receive the gift of the Holy Spirit.

In Acts 2:38, the Apostle Peter said, *“Repent, and let every one of you be baptized in the name of Jesus Christ for the remission of sins; and you shall receive the gift of the Holy Spirit.”* The Jews at that time could receive the remission of sins, therefore, they received the gift of the Holy Spirit when they admitted their wrongdoings, repented their ways of faith, and believed that Jesus the Son of God had taken all their sins with His baptism and paid off all the wages of sins by

dying on the Cross. The gospel of the water and the Spirit is the only true gospel that the Apostles preached from the beginning. Blessed are we who also believe in this original gospel. God the Father has sealed us as the true believers in the gospel of the water and the Spirit with the Holy Spirit, and protects us until we get into the Kingdom of Heaven.

Now, John the Apostle sincerely admonishes all of us, *“Therefore let that abide in you which you heard from the beginning” (1 John 2:24).* You and I must let the true gospel abide in our hearts, which we heard from the beginning. This is the only true gospel that will never be changed or nullified. How do we know that the gospel of the water and the Spirit is the original gospel that the Apostles heard from the beginning? It is because the Apostles John, Peter, and Paul commonly confessed their faiths in this true and original gospel (1 John 5:3-7, 1 Peter 3:21,



Romans 6:1-3, Galatians 3:27).

The Apostles received the remission of sins when they heard and believed in none other than the gospel of the water and the Spirit. And we can also receive the Holy Spirit when we are cleansed in our hearts by believing in the gospel of the water and the Spirit. The Holy Spirit does not come along with such a burning hot feeling. He comes down to the hearts of those who believe in the gospel of the water and the Spirit. God the Father sends the Holy Spirit to the believers' hearts and seals them with the Holy Spirit. For thus, you and I also came to be sinless and could understand what the Word of God really meant with His help.

John continued, *“These things I have written to you concerning those who try to deceive you”* (1 John 2:26). He pointed out that there were some people who tried to deceive the Early Church saints. That was why he tried to remind

them of the true gospel that was heard from the beginning again and again. It was to let the true gospel of the water and the Spirit stand firm in their hearts, and no liar could deceive them any more. Now, I am sure you might understand why the Apostle John said to his fellow saints, *“Therefore let that abide in you which you heard from the beginning. If what you heard from the beginning abides in you, you also will abide in the Son and in the Father. And this is the promise that He has promised us—eternal life.”* And he continued to teach them, *“But the anointing which you have received from Him abides in you, and you do not need that anyone teach you; but as the same anointing teaches you concerning all things, and is true, and is not a lie, and just as it has taught you, you will abide in Him”* (1 John 2:27). Now, we need one thing to abide in us, and it is the love of God that brought us eternal life.



*How did the Lord save us  
from our confusion, emptiness,  
and darkness?*

*He saved us from our confusion, emptiness,  
and darkness with the gospel of  
the water and the Spirit.*

The Bible clearly states that the Lord has saved us from all our sins through the water, the blood, and the Holy Spirit. This Truth is spoken consistently to us from the Creation. The Bible tells us in Genesis 1:1-3 the salvation of Christ: The Light was shining over the earth that was without form, void, and dark. The Light is Jesus Himself and His love (John 1:1-10). God has told us about the true gospel from the beginning.

However, most of us have been taught with the false gospels from the beginning because there have been so many false preachers of

wrong faith. Most of us have not even heard that there was a gospel of the water and the Spirit from the beginning. We used to have faith only in the blood of the Cross. But, frankly speaking, such faith could not cleanse all our sins from our hearts. In short, most of us used to have misguided faiths and didn't know how Jesus had cleansed all our sins with the water, the blood, and the Holy Spirit.

We must not keep such false gospels in our hearts. Dear fellow Christians, the passage "*let that abide in you which you heard from the beginning*" does not mean that you must keep the false gospel that you heard from the beginning. The only way you can get new life and abide in God the Father is to dwell in the gospel of the water and the Spirit. If you heard the true gospel that let you abide in the Father and the Son, then you must keep it in your mind from the time you first listened to it. We have



been able to dwell in Christ's love from the very moment we were truly born again of the water and the Spirit. "*Let that abide in you which you heard from the beginning*" means, therefore, we should keep the gospel of the water and the Spirit from the very first time we heard it and truly received the remission of sins by believing in it with our hearts.

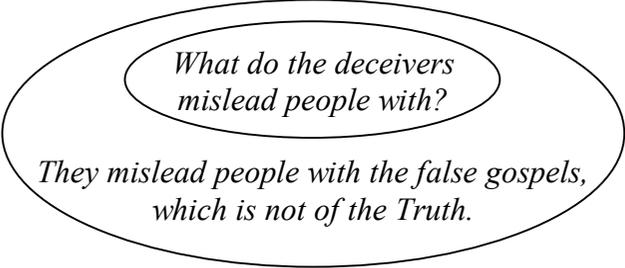
The Apostle John eventually talked about the love of Christ that had come by the gospel of the water and the Spirit, even though he used various expressions. In the love of Christ, God has given us eternal life, His perfect salvation, and made us His family and His people. He has given us all these blessings within the love of Jesus Christ.

There are many liars who try to deceive you with their false teachings. They are of the secret power of lawlessness (2 Thessalonians 2:7) that tries to drag you into the ways of destruction. You must refuse them and their teachings by

faith lest you should be deceived. If we truly abide in the love of Christ by having faith in the gospel of the water and the Spirit, then we can reject all sorts of lies in this world; we can discern all the lies from the Truth, what is wrong and right, when we examine them from the perspective of Christ's love that has come by the gospel of the water and the Spirit.

However, we can't discern between the Truth and the lies with our own wills or thoughts apart from the love of Jesus Christ. If the love of God does not dwell in our hearts, we cannot but rely on our own thoughts, and discriminate the lies from the Truth. In the love of Christ are the Truth, the salvation, eternal life, and all the other blessings of Heaven.





*What do the deceivers  
mislead people with?*

*They mislead people with the false gospels,  
which is not of the Truth.*

John the Apostle says, “*These things I have written to you concerning those who try to deceive you*” (1 John 2:26). The deceivers are preaching the false gospels apart from the true gospel of the water and the Spirit. Actually, the false gospels they preach have nothing to do with the gospel. They advocate their hypothesis in their own way. They have developed their own logic with their thoughts apart from the will of God and the love of Christ.

However, those who dwell in the love of Christ do not insist on their own righteousness, but preach the love of God and spread God’s

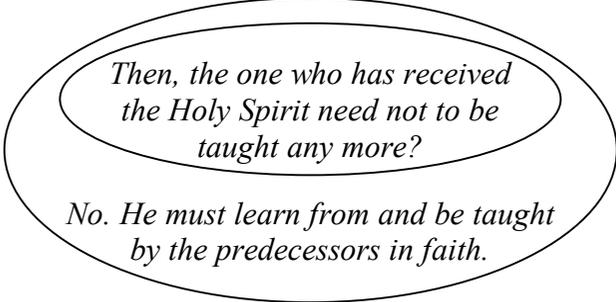
Word of Truth. In His love, the Lord has given us eternal remission of sins and the authentic love between brothers and sisters. In the love of Christ, we must discern the Truth, the true love, and the true gospel, and believe so as to unite with Christ and with each other.

If we have all we need, but don’t have the love of God that came by the gospel of the water and the Spirit, then, this means that we have nothing. No matter how well one memorizes the passages in the Bible, how well he preaches the Word of God, if he doesn’t know how Jesus Christ has loved and saved him with the gospel of the water and the Spirit, the true work of salvation will not happen to him.

When we love the lost souls as well as the brothers and sisters in Christ with His love, we can share true fellowship with each other, unite with each other, and receive the blessings from God. But for the love of Christ, it profits us



nothing. To us, the gospel of the water and the Spirit itself is the love of Jesus Christ. Truth, salvation and the love of Christ are not three different things. In His love, all have been fulfilled.



*Then, the one who has received the Holy Spirit need not to be taught any more?*

*No. He must learn from and be taught by the predecessors in faith.*

The Apostle John continues in 1 John 2:27-28, *“But the anointing which you have received from Him abides in you, and you do not need that anyone teach you; but as the same anointing teaches you concerning all things, and is true, and is not a lie, and just as it has taught you, you*

*will abide in Him. And now, little children, abide in Him, that when He appears, we may have confidence and not be ashamed before Him at His coming.”* This passage means, “Only the anointing, which is true and is not a lie, teaches you concerning all things, therefore, you have to abide in the Lord, just as it has taught you.” The One who anoints us is the Holy Spirit. He comes into the hearts of those who are born again of the water and the Spirit, and teaches and leads us concerning all things. His teaching is not a lie, but is true; therefore, we have to abide in the Lord as we have been taught.

Then, some might think, “Now the Holy Spirit dwells in the hearts of us, the born-again, and teaches all things to us, therefore, we do not have to learn from anyone anymore! Learning something from others only makes me go astray!” Such is not the case. Of course, each one of the born-again has received the Holy Spirit.



But because the spiritually young ones still cannot distinguish the spiritual things from the carnal things, they must learn from the predecessors in Christ. They can learn from and teach each other for they have the Holy Spirit in their hearts. But they cannot teach those who don't know the love of Christ and whose hearts are deceived by the false teachers. And the born-again cannot learn anything true from those who are not born again yet.

A long time ago, I met a pastor who was working for IVF, a college ministry, and shared God's Word with him at Pastor Samuel Kim's house. He was not born again. When Pastor Kim and his wife testified how they had been born again of the water and the Spirit before the pastor, he challenged me with the above passage, saying, "The Bible here says that the anointed need not be taught. Then, you have nothing to

teach these two, right?" He meant that I had no need to teach and share fellowship with Pastor Kim and his wife anymore.

But the passage of 1 John 2:27 does not mean that. Those who are born again need not learn the lies from the false teachers anymore, but now it is imperative for the newly born-again to learn the Truth in detail from the predecessors who have been born again prior to them.

This passage explains that we should learn the Word of Truth after coming into the love of Christ. But we don't need to learn the lies anymore. We have to learn every single detail concerning the Truth in the gospel of the water and the Spirit from the time we came to know the love of Christ. But we have nothing to learn from the deceivers who don't know Christ's love. In other words, the born-again have nothing to learn from those who are not born again, and these sinners have nothing to teach the righteous who

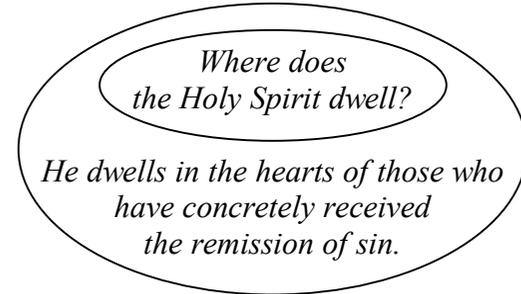


have received the Holy Spirit.

Some narcissists, who are not born-again, don't even realize why they cannot teach anyone and do nothing but speak ill of us, saying, "What nonsense! There is no curriculum, no faculty! What do they teach and learn at a place where they don't even teach the history of Christianity?" I can tell those people firmly and boldly that the reason why we don't teach such rubbish of the "so-called" great figures in Christianity, like Calvin, Luther, Matthew Henry, Darby, or Spurgeon, is because their teachings and doctrines are utterly meaningless and are filled with lies.

Only the Word of Truth that leads us to be born again is worth learning and teaching. We ought to teach it. Not teaching it is committing a great evil before God. That's why I have never taught such rubbish from this world to the born-again. I just open the Bible and share the Word

of God that leads us to be born again, makes us free from all our sins, and anoints us with the Holy Spirit.



The Holy Spirit of God dwells in the hearts of those who have received the remission of sins. He works only within the Word of God. He also works in the faiths of those who deliver the love of Christ, that is, who testify God's salvation revealed in the love of Christ. Abiding in our hearts, He helps us to understand the Word of God when we listen to it, and encourages us to



preach the Word to other souls. He wants us to understand the will of God fully and correctly.

The Holy Spirit teaches us the Word of Truth written in the Bible, and makes us understand it. For thus, He saves us by believing in it and tells us to preach the Word of Truth by faith. He makes us live according to the Word, and to reject what we have to reject according to the Truth. He works every good thing within according to the Word of God.

Dear fellow saints, have you been born again by believing in the gospel of the water and the Spirit? Then, you have to learn more about all the passages of the Bible, be led more in detail, be loved more in His Church, and receive more admonitions and reprimands. So, I am teaching my fellow believers, workers, and ministers with a two-sided orientation. One is the love of Christ, and the other is the strict instruction.

When my fellow believers need to be taught

with strict edification, then I do it strictly without hesitation. With God's word, I reprimand them as severely as I can. Whenever I meet a spiritually stubborn believer in my congregation, I reprimand him to make him humble before God. It is not because I hate him, but just to let him know the love of Christ. I can be severe to such disciples because my chastening is based on the love of Christ. Therefore, when we need to discipline our disciples and want to let them know the Truth, we, the leaders, must practice this dual-sided discipline.

When my disciples are dead tired, and are going to quit their lives of faith, I do not face them with a strict look. In such cases, I feel and say sorry to them, even though I have nothing to do with their situations or weaknesses. I console their grievances and difficulties in order for them to stand firm again on the love of Christ, and to proceed strongly and brightly while being



encouraged by the love of Christ. I cannot do this with my own feeling or will, but with the power of His love that leads and teaches us to live by His Word. Didn't He sacrifice Himself to save us because He so loved us? We now believe that He showed His love to us to make us reconcile with God the Father; that He was baptized and died on the Cross vicariously to let us know His love and to return thanks to God forever. Therefore, sometimes the leaders face their followers with a kind look, and sometimes with a severe chastening for their souls, because the leaders believe that this is the heart of Christ and His love, and that by doing this, we can unite with His will toward us, the born-again.

The Apostle John knows that the Holy Spirit abides in the hearts of the saints and the servants of God. Therefore, he says that they need not be taught from the worldly people, for the Holy Spirit teaches us all things concerning the Truth.

And the Holy Spirit is true and does not lie. He bears witness to our faiths as right when we believe in the Word of God as it is. He lets us know whether we are right or wrong, or when we believe correctly or mistakenly. He makes us feel uncomfortable when we go astray from our faiths. That's why we sometimes feel so uncomfortable. But, He gives us peace and joy in our hearts when we turn around from our mistaken faiths and believe correctly. He really does so.

Dear fellow saints, we have to abide in the love of Christ. Our ministers, brothers and sisters, that is, all the righteous, should abide in the love of Jesus Christ. What distinguished elements are there in us? Is it beneficial for us to competitively show off to each other?

We have become one family, regardless of our own wills, by receiving the remission of sins in the gospel of the water and the Spirit. And this



new family relationship of faith is more beautiful than any other kinships of this world. We, who belong to one family in the love of Christ, are woven with trust, love and pure friendship. Without His love, we cannot become one. We became brothers and sisters by the love of Christ. But without His love, we would have nothing to do with each other; we are nothing devoid of His salvation. We have to abide in the love of Christ as John told us, “*Abide in Him.*” This is the authentic faith, and the faith we should keep especially during these last days.

*How should we, who have  
the Holy Spirit, live?*

*We should live our lives of faith by  
loving each other and preaching  
the Truth of salvation.*

In these concluding times, even though knowledge and technology shall increase, there are not many who preach the gospel of the water and the Spirit. Therefore, we must preach more effectively by using the knowledge and technology for evangelism.

Now, all the people of this world have a thirst for the love of Christ. There is no such thing as true love anywhere. Many Christians, who profess to be born again, but actually are not, hurt those who have the true gospel with their false gospels. I sometimes get angry with them, but have decided to be indifferent to them from now on. All their evildoings spring from their darkness: They are thoroughly in darkness because they do not abide in the love of Christ. We know why they do such things, and therefore, we need not argue the pros and cons of their strange behaviors.

If we are in the love of Christ, we can live



harmoniously with the other saints by loving and understanding each other. We are not willing to live so, but we know that such a life is the most beautiful and abundantly blessed life in the world. We have true faith for we have received the love of Christ; we can forgive each other's mistakes for we have received the remission of sins by the love of Christ, the gospel of the water and the Spirit; and we can live the most worthy and benevolent lives that preach the true gospel and take care of other souls. We must first have the love of Christ in order to walk in Christ and stay dwelling in Him.

We must have the love of Christ. We must ruminate everyday the love of Jesus, who offered His own body, to show us His unconditional love: We must imagine again the figure of Jesus who was baptized in the Jordan River; we must imagine again His figure who suffered hardships beyond description on the Cross; we must

meditate again on the faith that the resurrected Jesus will lead us to the Kingdom of Heaven.

Whenever we commit sins because of our weaknesses, we cannot but be more thankful for His love of salvation, which is revealed in the gospel of the water and the Spirit. We experience that the sprout of love is growing in our hearts when we know, believe, and accept the love of Christ in heart. And we will see the big tree of love in us when we live our lives while preaching His love. If we do so, we will never be ashamed before Him at His coming. We will not live disgraceful lives as long as we have His love. This is why John the Apostle admonishes us to abide in Jesus' love.

We must abide in love, which is none other than the love of Christ. This love does not refer to the carnal love or the humanistic love. We have to stay in His love: We have to work in His love, love each other in His love, and preach the

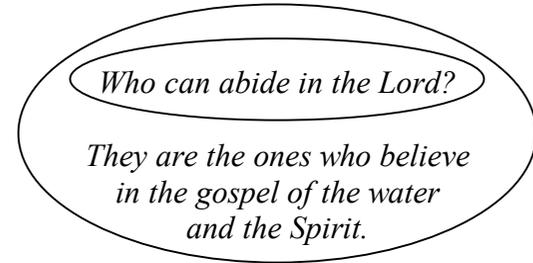


gospel in His love. We are actually serving the Lord in His love. We make much of our brothers and sisters, and love them in His love. Therefore, when we do all things in the love of Christ, we come to receive God's blessing more abundantly, plan to do the greater spiritual works, and devote ourselves to spread the great love of Jesus. That's why the Apostle John advises us to live in Christ's love. Hallelujah!

In John's days, some people in his church tried to deceive the born-again, who believed in the gospel of the water and the Spirit and abided in the Lord. In the days of the Apostle Paul, there were also some who troubled the saints and wanted to pervert the gospel of Christ (Galatians 1:7). They made and preached the other gospels, which stated, "We must say prayers of repentance whenever we sin, cleanse ourselves with such prayers, and therefore, must sanctify ourselves by getting rid of the filth from our lives

immediately."

John the Apostle called such people the enemies of God who were trying to deceive the saints. Actually, their doctrines have confused and destroyed our concrete faiths until now. Therefore, John reminded and warned us that such antichrists would be very dangerous to our faiths, saying, "You have to abide in the Lord as I teach you from the beginning."



1 John 2:28 says, "*And now, little children, abide in Him, that when He appears, we may have confidence and not be ashamed before Him at His coming.*" John says that if we abide in the



gospel of the water and the Spirit, we will have great confidence and not be ashamed before the Lord when He comes again. On the other hand, those who do not abide in Him will end up as the enemies of God.

Whoever believes that Jesus is the Son of God and the Savior is one who has already received the perfect salvation by faith. They are the owners of the infinitely valuable and strong faith.

Of course, we sometimes fall into darkness. But, if we abide in the Lord, the darkness soon withdraws from our hearts. We may fall into errors, or sometimes repeat the same error again and again, but the key point is whether we abide in Him or not. It is written in John 15:7, *“If you abide in Me, and My words abide in you, you will ask what you desire, and it shall be done for you.”* God promises to answer all our prayers if we abide in Jesus Christ and to ask for His help by having faith in His Word in our hearts. God

has answered me until now, if my request was not for an evil purpose, and He will hear my prayers continuously.

What makes us have unashamed faiths is to abide in the gospel of the water and the Spirit. It is, in other words, to abide in Christ. Believing in the gospel of the water and the Spirit is the faith that makes us abide in the Lord, and this faith is the wisdom that prevents us from becoming His enemies. If we do not abide in Jesus Christ, we surely become His enemies. Who are the enemies of Christ? They are none other than the people who don't recognize Jesus as their true Savior, who is the Son of God; was baptized to take all our sins; died on the Cross; and resurrected from the dead to give us His perfect salvation. They are the ones who don't receive Him.

We must not deny Him. We must accept Jesus Christ along with the gospel of the water and the



Spirit, the Word of God. What excellences in you make you so arrogant and reject His perfect love? Are you too smart to admit this true gospel at once? Do you think you are so intelligent that you can reason out all the answers to all the questions? Do you think that you can meet God only within the realm of your understanding?

We must accept God's Word of Truth as it is. If He says that He created the universe, the only way of wisdom we can go is to just accept the Truth saying, "Yes, You did. Amen." No one knows everything of the universe. A famous scientist once said, "We must be humble before the Creator. Humans are now very proud of their knowledge and technology, and many of them think that humans will conquer the entire universe. But remember this truth! All the knowledge about the universe we have accumulated is smaller than a dust of the globe, when we liken the universe to this planet."

Doctors say, "Of course, I operate. But I am not the real operator in a patient's life. He who gives life or death to us is God." So, even a few non-Christian doctors are known to pray before they perform operations upon the fatal patients: "God, please help this patient to live again." Even an atheist says the same prayer when he is lying on the operating table: Please, God, save me from death! I will believe in You from now on, if You do so."

We the creations are to seek the Creator, who exists from the beginning. The very Creator is Jesus Christ. And He says that He visited us and has cleansed us from all our sins. What's the reason for you to deny His love, then? We should not stand against God, pretending to be smart before Him. We should rather believe in His Word and admit our insufficiencies. Do you know how many servants of God had to die for the Bible so that you could have one? Jesus says,



*“I sent you to reap that for which you have not labored; others have labored, and you have entered into their labors” (John 4:38).* Now, we are reaping the fruits from their labors. Most of all, Jesus Christ has labored extremely for our salvation. We have received salvation that He has fulfilled thoroughly. We are receiving eternal lives just by believing in the gospel of the water and the Spirit that He has completed for Himself. Whoever believes so receives the eternal life. Do you believe?

Is there anyone who is ashamed of himself for his sins before God, and is unable to stand in front of Him at this point? I am not ashamed of myself before Him. It is not because of my arrogance, but just because I now abide in the Lord. I am not ashamed of myself by faith in Him because He has taken all the sins of the world, including mine, by being baptized, dying on the Cross, and resurrecting from the dead to

complete our salvation. At least, I need not be ashamed of myself because I have received the remission of sins by faith.

I don't know how He will reward you and me. Some of you might be rewarded more than me. But, as far as the issue of salvation is concerned, I will not be ashamed of my faith at His coming. I am not ashamed of my faith because I now abide in the Lord because I believe that He has blotted out all our sins with His gospel of the water and the Spirit, and because I have received it with my heart. We who have such faiths have no reason to be ashamed of ourselves.

Therefore, John the Apostle says, *“If you know that He is righteous, you know that everyone who practices righteousness is born of Him” (1 John 2:29).* This passage means, “You come to practice righteous works, if you know and believe that Jesus Christ has blotted out all the sins of the world by doing righteous work.



And you come to know that this righteousness is His, and that all righteousness belongs to Him

When Jesus was baptized by John the Baptist, He said to him, *“Permit it to be so now, for thus it is fitting for us to fulfill all righteousness”* (Matthew 3:15). Jesus came to this earth in the likeness of sinful flesh, on account of our sins (Romans 8:3). And He took all our sins by being baptized by John the Baptist. He showed His love not by His lips only, but He actually was baptized to fulfill all the righteousness of God with His body. For thus, He took all the sins of the world to be the valid Lamb of God. And He carried all these sins to the Cross, and died on it to atone for them. On the verge of His vicarious death, He cried out, *“It is finished!”* (John 19:30) He rose again from the dead to be the Savior of mankind.

Thus He has fulfilled all righteousness, and makes all believers righteous. If you really

believe that Jesus has saved you and me from all our sins according to the will of God the Father, you then become a righteous person and can practice righteousness. Fundamentally, the born-again yearn to serve the gospel of God. Even though their deeds may be insufficient, they are pleased to live for righteousness by faith. So, the Apostle John makes us aware that we, who try to live for righteousness by preaching the gospel, are the servants of God and His people.

He is telling us in order for us not to become the enemies of Jesus. Do you practice the righteousness of God? Are you born of Christ? We once are born of our parents, but are born again as the righteous by believing in Jesus Christ. We are born again as sinless people, God’s people who are not ashamed of themselves.

Have you ever been to India? I haven’t been to India, but have seen its land and people.



Hinduism is the dominant religion of this country, and it has something to do with the doctrine of the transmigration of souls of Buddhism. This religion is deeply related with the caste system, the social system of this country. People of Hinduism believe that they can be born into a family that belongs to a better social status in their future lives if they live virtuously during the present age. Hindus believe that they will be born again to a low-class as an animal, or even as a snake, if they do not live virtuously in this life. In short, their future lives are absolutely dependent upon their present lives.

However, they also believe that there is one way for them to escape from such an inevitable cycle of metempsychosis. It is to cremate the body. You might have seen on TV that they were burning the corpses to ashes at the riverside of the Ganges. They believe that the souls of the dead will be born into a better status by doing so.

What a foolish idea this is! How silly they are to believe so! I think they came to develop such doctrines because they could never be freed from their sense of guilt.

But, we have received God's blessing that actually makes us free from all our sins. We now became the righteous, who can practice righteousness and live a righteous life. And we know that all these are from the power of Jesus Christ. As is written in the Scripture, "A tree is known by its fruit," whoever lives a righteous life, that is, whoever lives for the gospel is a born-again saint who lives a new life.

Do you think that you are so excellent that you can now serve the Lord well? We are able to live a righteous life only by believing the Truth that the Lord has done for us as it is. We come to be saved by faith, and do the righteous works because the Lord has actually delivered us from all our sins and made us His children. And we



became His workers, who do the righteous works of saving other souls, serve the Church of God and its members, and deal well with necessary tasks in His Church. Even though we differ from each other in our gifts and duties, we serve the same gospel in different ways and positions.

In the days of John, there were some people who went out from God's Church because of their disbeliefs. Therefore, he reiterates the gospel of the water and the Spirit continuously. He goes on through chapter 3 and 4 with the same theme, and finally draws a conclusion in chapter 5.

Now, you and I are serving the gospel in God's Church. It is because we believe in Him that we can do so. We must remember that we are able to serve Him because we are born of Him. I believe in this. From now on, we must not regard Christ from a worldly point of view (2 Corinthians 5:16). We must know Him in spirit

and in Truth. And we should remain faithful to Him so that we may please Him. ☒





# USER GUIDE



How to Read

Easier Way to Read

Cover Page

---

# HOW TO READ

---

## PAGING THROUGH THE BOOK

Page by Page

Skipping to a Page



# PAGE BY PAGE



- **KeyBoard**

1) Page Up / Page Down Key

Page Up = Previous Page,      Page Down = Next Page

2) Arrow Key

← or ↑ = Previous Page,      → or ↓ = Next Page

- **Acrobat Reader Menu Button**

◀ = Previous Page,      ▶ = Next Page

- **Link**

◀ = Previous Page,      ▶ = Next Page  
Contents = Go to Table of Contents



## SKIPPING TO A PAGE



### 1) Key Board

Ctrl + N Key : The number of page you want to go to.

### 2) Acrobat Reader Scroll Bar

Click and drag in the scroll bar until the page number in the number field matches the page you want to go to.



---

# EASIER WAY TO READ

---

## Using Bookmarks

You can move easily where you want by using bookmarks

- Show bookmarks : Press F5 Key on your keyboard
- Hide bookmarks : Press F5 Key again

